

**IN LIEU OF
DIRECTORS' ORGANIZATIONAL MEETING
Monday, July 13, 2020**

I. DIRECTORS CORRESPONDENCE

PLANNING DEPARTMENT

1. Annexation Map AN2007
2. Annexation Map AN 2008
3. Administrative Approvals June 23, 2020 through June 29, 2020
4. Administrative Approvals June 30, 2020 through July 6, 2020
5. Final Action dated July 9, 2020

II. CONSTITUENT CORRESPONDENCE

1. Police Reform Proposal - Amy Wilmer
2. Response to Gretchen Larsen, Language access at City Council meetings - Provided by Mindy Rush Chipman, Director of Lincoln Commission on Human Rights
3. Comment during Council meeting - Lauren Gatti
4. ALM not BLM - Wayne Miller
5. Police Reform - Sean O'Connor
6. Recycling drop-off sites - Bob Reeves
7. The Trumpster to "Delay" the Election - Ruth Marion Graf Calabria
8. Euler Rentals LLC Letter of Support - Brian Lavelle
9. Appeal Special Permit 20016 - Bruce Prenda
Staff response provided by Geri Rorabaugh, Administrative Officer, Planning Department
10. Citizen Police Advisory Board - Anna Grace Hilton
11. Recommendation for Independent Police/Law Enforcement Oversight - Dewayne Mays
12. Prairie Hill CUP - Phillip Euler, P.E.

III. CONSTITUENT CORRESPONDENCE REQUESTING TO DEFUND LPD

See attached items

IV. CONSTITUENT CORRESPONDENCE IN SUPPORT OF LPD

See attached items

V. CONSTITUENT CORRESPONDENCE PLANNING COMMISSION APPOINTMENT

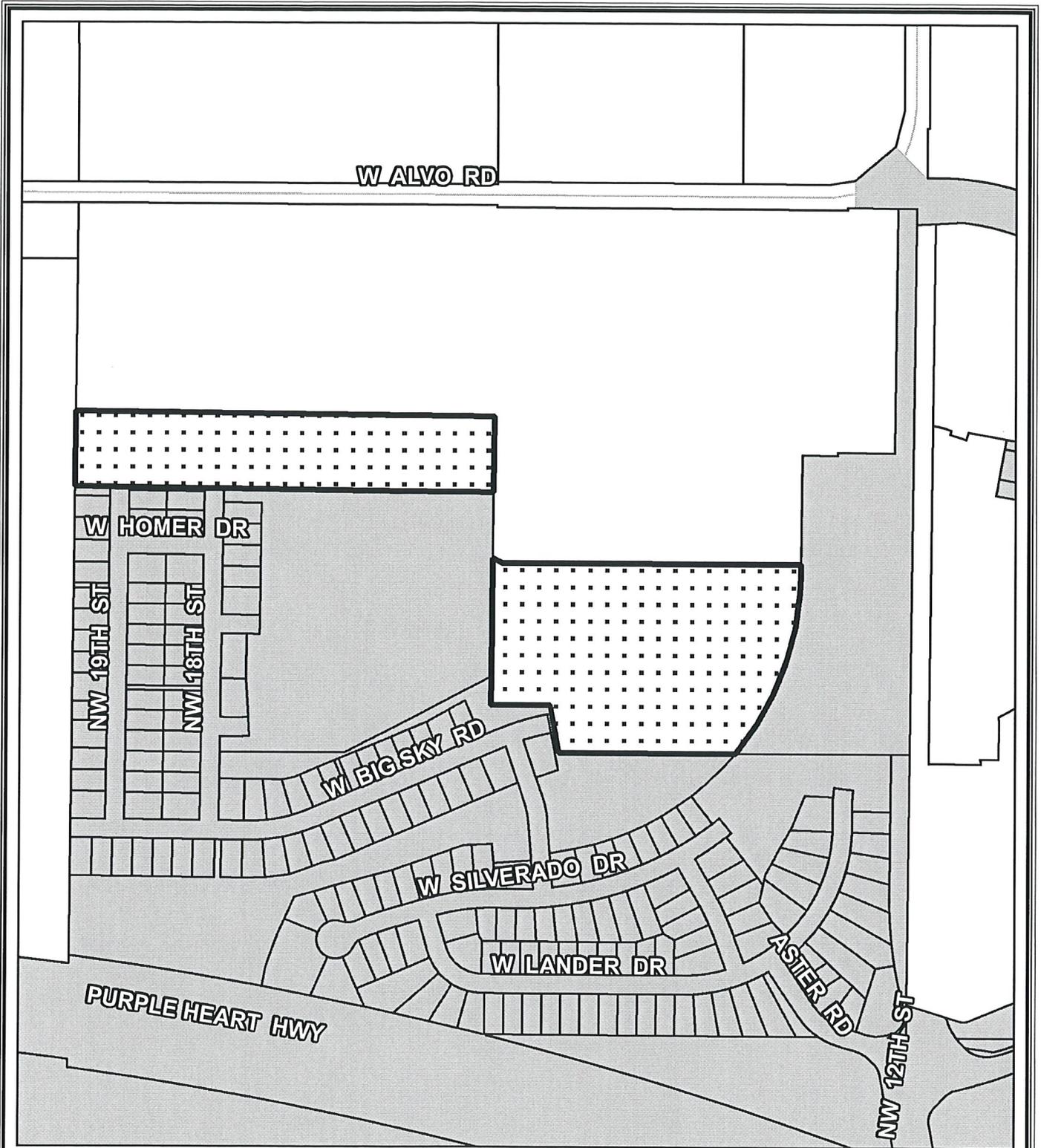
See attached items

VI. CONSTITUENT CORRESPONDENCE CHARTER REVISION COMMITTEE

See attached items

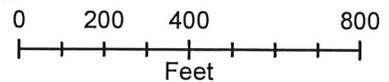
VII. CONSTITUENT CORRESPONDENCE PROPOSED SPECIAL PERMIT SP20020

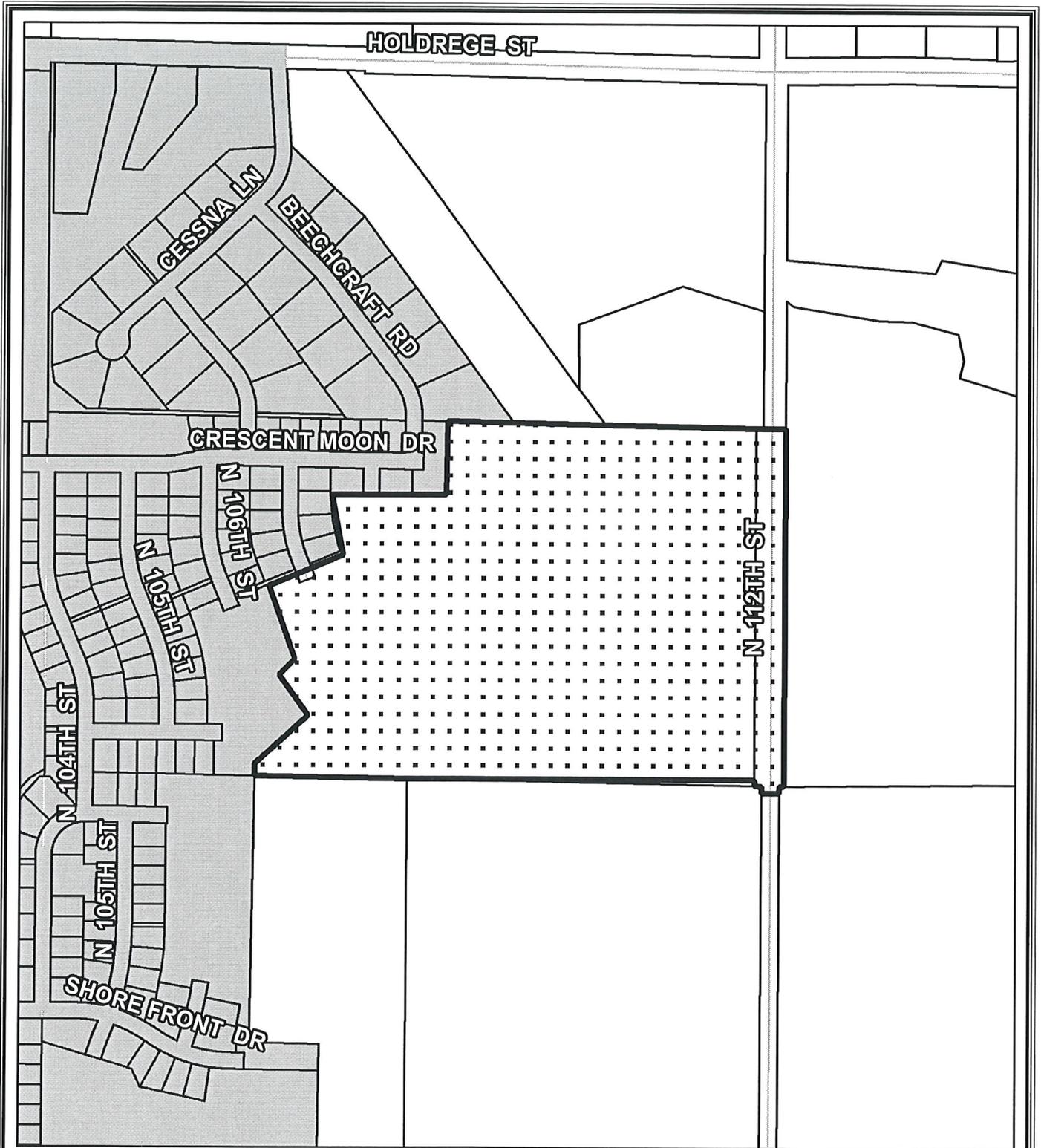
See attached items



**Annexation by Ordinance
Highland View
NW 12th St & W Alvo Rd
Effective: June 30, 2020**

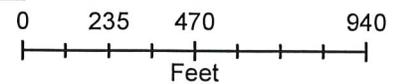
-  Area of Annexation
-  Tax Parcels
-  City Limits Before Annexation





**Annexation by Ordinance
Dominion at Stevens Creek
N 112th St & Holdrege St
Effective: June 30, 2020**

-  Area of Annexation
-  Tax Parcels
-  City Limits Before Annexation



f:\its\gis\arcview\ann_notif\Annexation Notification Map.mxd
f:\its\gis\arcview\ann_notif\AN2008.pdf



Memorandum

Date: ♦ July 2, 2020

To: ♦ City Clerk

From: ♦ Rhonda Haas, Planning Dept.

Re: ♦ Administrative Approvals

cc: ♦ Geri Rorabaugh, Planning Dept.

This is a list of City administrative approvals by the Planning Director from June 23, 2020 through June 29, 2020:

Administrative Amendment 20026 to Change of Zone 07063E, I-80 West Lincoln Business Center, approved by the Planning Director on June 25, 2020, to reduce the rear yard setbacks from 20 feet to 15 feet for Lots in Blocks 8 and 10 that back to Outlots B and C, and update the layout for Blocks 5 and 6 to change single family lots to attached single family lots generally located at NW 56th Street and W. Holdrege Street.



Memorandum

Date: ♦ July 8, 2020

To: ♦ City Clerk

From: ♦ Rhonda Haas, Planning Dept.

Re: ♦ Administrative Approvals

cc: ♦ Geri Rorabaugh, Planning Dept.

This is a list of City administrative approvals by the Planning Director from June 30, 2020 through July 6, 2020:

Administrative Amendment 20032 to Use Permit 144, Pioneer Woods Office Park, approved by the Planning Director on July 1, 2020, to revise the floor area table to increase the floor area on Lot 7 from 15,000 to 22,000 square feet, generally located at Pioneers Blvd and South 70th Street.

PLANNING COMMISSION FINAL ACTION NOTIFICATION

TO: Mayor Leirion Gaylor Baird
Lincoln City Council

FROM: Geri Rorabaugh, Planning

DATE: July 9, 2020

RE: Notice of final action by Planning Commission: July 8, 2020

Please be advised that on July 8, 2020, the Lincoln City-Lancaster County Planning Commission adopted the following resolution:

Resolution PC-01712, approving **SPECIAL PERMIT 05015B**, as amended, to allow up to 312 single-family dwellings and revision of the layout and drainage study, with waivers to lot dimensions, block length, pedestrian way easements, double frontage lots, and sanitary sewer design standards, on property legally described as Lots 1- 7, Block 1, Lots 1-11, Block 2, Lots 1-4, Block 3, Lots 1-18, Block 4, Outlot 'D', and internal street right-of-way, Hartland's Garden Valley Addition; Lots 1-6, Block 1, Lots 1-9, Block 2, Lots 1-8, Block 3, Hartland's Garden Valley 1st Addition; Lots 1-3 and Outlot 'B', Hartland's Garden Valley 2nd Addition; Lots 1-14, Block 1, Lots 1-3, Block 2, Lots 1-5, Block 3, Lots 1 and 2, Block 4, Hartland's Garden Valley 3rd Addition; Lot 1, Block 1, Lots 1-7, Block 2, Lots 1 through 7, Block 3, Lots 1-10, Block 4, Lots 1-6, Block 5, Lots 1-5, Block 6, and Outlots 'A' -'E', Hartland's Garden Valley 4th Addition together with Lot 2 and Lot 3 except the South 7.00 feet and part of Lot 1, Block 4, and the East Half of Lots 1 and 4 except the South 7.00 feet, Block 3, and that part of North 11th Street which lies between Blocks 3 and 4, Garden Valley, all located in the SE 1/4 of Section 35-11-6, Lincoln, Lancaster County, Nebraska, generally located at North 14th Street and Fletcher Avenue;

Resolution PC-01713, approving **SPECIAL PERMIT 20020**, to allow for an alternative-to-imprisonment facility with up to 6 persons within an existing residence, on property legally described as Lot 11, Block 162, Original Lincoln located in the SE 1/4 of Section 26-10-6, Lincoln, Lancaster County, Nebraska, generally located at 838 F Street.

The Planning Commission action on this application is final, unless appealed to the City Council by filing a notice of appeal with the Planning Department within 14 days of the action by the Planning Commission.

The Planning Commission Resolution may be accessed on the internet at www.lincoln.ne.gov (Keyword = PATS). Use the Search Selection@ screen and search by application number (i.e. SP05015B, SP20020). The Resolution and Planning Department staff report are in "Related Documents" under the application number.

Angela M. Birkett

From: dc1@lpne.org
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 3:07 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police reform proposal:

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Flagged

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear council members, thank you for your time.

The mayor announced last week that she will be working with LPD to examine and reform certain practices and training, but unfortunately that doesn't get to the root of why police and citizen interactions begin in the first place. I'm writing to implore you to start looking at and removing the many ordinances and laws that increase police-citizen interactions. You have a wonderful opportunity to make long lasting real change by identifying these over-reaching statutes that have lead to a clash of Karen culture and "law and order types" with those who are simply making personal choices that, while some may not agree with, are typically nonviolent and victimless. This clash coupled with the ever-growing numbers of laws and ordinances we place on each other leads to increased interactions between law enforcement and citizens. By reducing the number of statutes, we can reduce the number of police interactions, and by reducing the number of interactions we can reduce violent interactions as well. This is both for the safety of our officers as well as our citizens.

The city of Crystal, MN put together a volunteer citizen task force to reexamine their city code, this allowed citizens to have input and a better understanding of the statutes and laws we live under. We Lincolniters could partner with the council, look at these old codes, statutes and ordinances and bring them up to modern standards and speech, and get new perspective on what codes and statutes contribute to greater chances of unneeded police interactions with our citizens.

Another step that we can take to truly change lives is to ban the box*.

35 states have already passed laws at the public level and 13 at the private level. We just got the news last week that our prisons are at a critical point, with no end in sight of reducing incoming prisoners, and these two steps could reduce new prisoners getting into the system and giving present offenders a better chance at getting a job instead of re-offending.

Please change lives for the better, please help those who others view as throw away humans, please reduce the city's fingerprints on our citizens' lives.

I thank you again for your time and I'd like this to be entered into the public record.

Sincerely,
Amy Wimer
402-802-5790

*From Wikipedia: "Ban the Box is the name of an American campaign by advocates for ex-offenders, aimed at removing the check box that asks if applicants have a criminal record from hiring applications."

**I had intended to come in tonight so I could answer any questions but with the air quality plus covid plus extreme asthma I decided against it, but I'd definitely love to answer any questions and work with any of you to make Lincoln a better place for ALL citizens.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Mindy M. Rush Chipman
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 5:52 PM
To: gretchenkathleenlarsen@gmail.com
Cc: Richard W. Meginnis; 'royforlincoln@gmail.com'; Bennie R. Shobe; Tammy J. Ward; James M. Bowers; Jane Raybould; Sandra J. Washington; 'Richard Meginnis'; Roy A. Christensen; Angela M. Birkett; Jeff R. Kirkpatrick; Adelle L. Burk; Beau A. Wolfe
Subject: Language Access for City Council Meetings

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Flagged

Dear Gretchen Larsen,

Your email message regarding language access at City Council meetings was forwarded to me earlier today -- thank you for sharing your concerns and ideas.

Communicating about City services and City actions in a way that is accessible to all community members is important and an on-going challenge. We are pleased to report that within the next month to month and a half, we will begin broadcasting over LNKTv with closed captioning, with Spanish language captioning options. This will include City Council meetings, Mayor Gaylor Baird's community and news briefings, as well as other City programming. This is a significant investment for the community; however, we know there are other opportunities to increase language access and I would be happy to discuss your ideas on how we can reach and involve other segments of the community in an effective manner. Please let me know if you would like to connect by phone to discuss further and/or be looped in on any community conversations regarding language access that may happen in the future.

Thank you, again, for reaching out and for advocating for this important issue in our community.

Best,

Mindy Rush Chipman

[Pronouns](#): She.Her.Hers

Director of Lincoln Commission on Human Rights

Equity and Diversity Officer | City of Lincoln

P: 402.441.8691 | F: 402.441.6937 | C: 402-890-8287

555 S. 10th Street, Ste. 304

Lincoln, NE 68508

humanrights.lincoln.ne.gov

Follow us on [Facebook](#)

For the latest Coronavirus (COVID-19) updates
please visit covid19.lincoln.ne.gov



To report illegal discrimination within the City of Lincoln please utilize [LCHR's](#) online [Intake Questionnaire](#)



Angela M. Birkett

From: Soulinnee Phan
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 6:54 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Comment during Council meeting

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Flagged

Lauren Gatti 06:37 PM
Hello,

I have very much enjoyed being able to sit on on the meeting tonight. I registered to attend tonight in order to formally ask that from here on out (beyond next week) that all future City Council meetings be available via Zoom. This would cost the city nothing and would be a good way to democratize the process by allowing people to participate and sit in remotely. Informed citizens who are able to effectively participate in local politics is a crucial element of democracy.

I implore the Lincoln City Council to make this small but important change— to allow remote participation— so that we, as citizens, have more opportunities to participate.

Thank you for registering this comment in your meeting notes.

Sincerely,

Lauren Gatti
1623 S. 20th St.
Lincoln, NE 68502

608-698-0547

Angela M. Birkett

From: Wayne Miller <insman00710@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 8:45 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: ALM not BLM

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Flagged

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Our police need our support. All lives matter not just BLM. All of these protests result from a few bad apples. Incidents are caused they don't just happen. When people start taking responsibility for their own actions, these issues won't happen. People that have to work and support their families, don't have time to cause public problems. The Democratic party funds these protests and riots. It is a political issue. States and cities with Democratic leaders seem to have unrest and most of the problems. And social media loves this stuff. Defund our police and see what happens. Just think about it.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Sean O'Connor <smoconnor2012@yahoo.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 11:26 AM
Subject: Police Reform

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Flagged

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

We the people with the Movement for Black Lives demand the following reforms immediately:

1. Suspend the use of paid admin. leave for cops under investigation: this reduces police funding, challenges the notion that the administrative costs of policing violence are essential to safety, & reduces the overall support for policing by removing the financial support.
2. Withhold pensions and don't rehire cops involved in excessive force: this decreases police funding, challenges the notion that police killings are exceptions rather than the rule, and reduces the ability of the police forces to re-engage with cops known for their use of violence.
3. Require cops to be liable for misconduct settlements: this saves community budgets a lot of money, rejects the notion that the costs of policing are essential to safety, and creates financial pressure for police to be accountable for their actions.
4. Cap overtime pay for military exercises and withdraw participation in police militarization programs: this saves our communities money, rejects the idea that we need cops trained for "counterterrorism", and stops police from increasing their capacity/reach over our daily lives.
5. Prioritize spending on community health, education and affordable housing: defunding police decreased their resources. This creates space for us to learn about resources that create well-being. Decreasing police funding means decreasing the size, scope and capacity of policing.

All of these steps work to reduce the size of the police force and minimize the role it plays in our society, which gives us more space and resources to invest in Black communities.

Thank you,

Sean O'Connor

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Bob Reeves <bobreeves63@gmail.com>
Sent: Friday, July 03, 2020 6:35 PM
To: Council Packet; Council Packet; Mayor
Subject: recycling drop-off sites
Attachments: Andy Ringsmuth letter.docx

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Flagged

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I'm attaching a letter to the editor by Andy Ringsmuth that appeared in today's (7/3) Lincoln Journal Star. While I'm not as angry as he appears to be, and I don't have the low opinion of government officials that he seems to have, I believe he raises a valid point. As recycling becomes less convenient, people will quit doing it. I don't believe most people who have been using drop-off sites for free, close to where they live, will suddenly start paying for home-pickup recycling services. The city should be doing everything possible to encourage recycling, not discouraging it. His comment about pouring used oil on cardboard isn't just funny. I've known people who have intentionally allowed cardboard to get wet and dirty so they could put it in the trash. The rule causes people to be irresponsible. But mainly, we need to have enough convenient recycling centers so that people will continue to recycle. As I suggested in my previous letter, Why don't you keep 10 recycling drop off sites open rather than reducing to only 3 or 4?

Thanks four your consideration,

Bob Reeves
3236 Dudley St.
Lincoln, NE 68503
402-464-1803

Recently, the city decided to remove about 80 percent of Lincoln's drop-off recycling sites.

First, our former mayor mandated cardboard recycling. Then, he added cardboard drop-off sites at library parking lots. However, it didn't take long, and those were eliminated.

Now, far more sites are going away. In what sane world does the government mandate a particular course of action and then slowly make it increasingly difficult for citizens to comply with that mandate? Oh, wait. Sane government is an oxymoron especially here in Lincoln.

Every single thing about this decision is wrong. It serves only to make it far more difficult for citizens to bring their recyclable items to a drop-off site. In this effort, LTU is actively discouraging recycling when they should be encouraging it, under the lie of saving a few pennies.

What will be the end result? More material going into the trash and our landfill reaching capacity sooner rather than later. Personally, I bring items to a site a few blocks from my home specifically because it is convenient, particularly with regards to cardboard. What will I do now? Truthfully? Dump some used motor oil on my cardboard and then put it in my trash can. Or maybe burn it in the fire pit in my back yard.

This is a foolhardy, poorly thought out and downright stupid idea. And I refuse to pay extra of what little hard-earned money I have for curbside pickup.

Call me a cynic, but I believe I understand the ultimate goal here. It is a subtle step towards killing off more small businesses around town, otherwise known as refuse companies, and moving Lincoln to city-run refuse service.

Do not let this recycling change happen.

Andy Ringsmuth, Lincoln

Angela M. Birkett

From: Ruth Marion Graf <ruthmariongraf77@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 9:42 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: The Trumpster to "Delay" the Election, Indefinitely Eventually.
Attachments: Human Bee Hive.docx

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Baird:

The media points out that while Trump pays lip service to wanting to contain the covid-19 pandemic, the policies he's openly touted of his encouraging a premature reopening of the economy, his holding rallies that totally flout disease preventing social distancing and his and his team's unmistakable downplaying of the proven strategy of all of us wearing face masks have done nothing but pour gasoline on the blaze of the coronavirus, as the numbers show clearly. Why is he doing this?

It's not some psychological dysfunction on the part of our crazy like a fox president. Rather, the answer shines through this fog of A to Z double talk in the Fox News Republican Party's endless denunciation of mail-in ballots as the worst thing that could happen to America since the assassination of JFK. With absolutely no tangible proof, why are they asserting this nonsense anti-mail-in claim so repeatedly and vigorously?

It's so that as we approach Election Day, the Trumpster will be able to use the by-then super-murderous pandemic he's managed to bring about with his policies as an excuse for calling off the election in October, the possibility of mail-in ballots as an amelioration of the problem of the electorate being infected by in-person voting drowned out by the incessant rant that such a mail-in substitute would treasonously be the end of fair elections and all freedom in America. And keep in mind that the Trumpster's got the right-wing packed Supreme Court to rubber stamp this cleverly planned dictatorial takeover of our once so special America.

A broader, mathematically precise book-length analysis of the underlying causes of America's coming collapse into this horror hole of Third Reich level control and what can be done to prevent it is available for a donation of \$1 or more wired to Ruth Calabria, A/C # 8910439820, Alpine Bank, Routing # 102103407, that along with your hitting the reply button on this email so I know where to send your copy of A Control Theory of the Human Beehive.

The donations will be used to actively do everything possible to thwart Trump's cancelling the election and to foster a write-in vote for me in a people slapped together replacement election that we'll work so hard to bring about. Why me instead of Joe Biden? Because I have as much goodness in me towards the people as any Democrat Party career politician, all millionaires, could ever have. And I'm at least three times as smart as Sleepy Joe as the mathematical arguments for revolution I make in the book make clear.

Please forward this warning to friends and colleagues and/or post it in a public place. Thank you for joining the revolution in an active way,

Ruth Marion Graf Calabria

One World with No Weapons

P.S. If this take on the Trumpster seems too unbelievably harsh - would Donald Trump really murder 100,000 people with the virus to steal the election? - besides my mathematical arguments against Trump being backed up with my co-author's PhD in biophysics reasoning, my brother, Don, is a classic conservative lawyer down in Lubbock TX, and, I know from a lifetime of utterly vicious family contact, is a fundamentalist cutthroat who has no problem slaughtering and eating a new-born infant for breakfast for the pure delight in it. I know these people. I grew up with them and was once by their direction an LCMS Lutheran missionary. Bad is an understated description of their deviousness as my telling of them in the book makes clear.

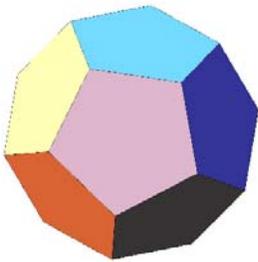
P.P.S. My very smart so-author wants to get his two cents in: Trump is an obvious crook and murderer, a killer. That's his calling in life as a quick glance at his story makes clear. And anybody who reads it differently is either the dumbest fool the world has ever seen or a murderer himself. Biden, on the other hand, is a mannerly predator, a fellow phony who treats his victims with kindness before he cuts their throats. Ask the victims of the murderous, lock-em-all-up crime bill he sponsored in the 90s, never to be excused, forgotten or forgiven. The only hope in life for the 99% of us on the bottom is the myth of heaven after we exit life, a con-game if ever there was one. Or joining Ruth's mastermind political movement for One World With No Weapons, the details of which are spelled out on the attachment for free at my urging.

α-997

A Control Theory of the Human Beehive



By Ruth Marion & Peter V. Calabria, PhD, (biophysics)



Introduction

Only a blind fundamentalist would deny the obvious similarities between human civilization and beehive societies, both consisting of a large group of organisms arranged in specialize subgroups that provide common labor and share in its survival rewards.

Our evolving the same type of social existence as our genetically unrelated cousins, the social insects, should not be thought of as just a matter of coincidence, for it came about in natural history for both of us, rather, because living in a highly ordered group is sharply favorable for the evolutionary fitness and continued biological success of a species.

Our primary interest here, though, lies not so much with what makes the two of us, human and social insect, similar, like making war and employing reproductive restraint, but what makes us different in the details of these and and other similar activities. For that difference is the key to clarifying the endemic unhappiness in the human hive that has pushed depression, suicide and general discord to such intolerable levels in America since World War II.

Simply put, the social activities of insects like bees, ants and termites come about purely genetically and take the form of **stimulus-response behaviors** while we humans predominantly employ **goal directed behavior** in what we do, the bulk of which derives from cultural programming imposed on human individuals by economic and police coercion and 24/7 suggestive mind control.

Let's hold off on explaining goal directed behavior for the moment until we first give a quick look at stimulus-response, SR, behavior as it occurs in humans. When a woman reflexively responds to her hand being accidentally burned by a lit match by instinctively jerking it away from the flame, that's SR behavior. There's no need for the person being burned to first formulate mentally the goal of getting their hand away from the flame. Jerking the hand away immediately on feeling the pain happens reflexively without having to think of the goal or end point of the activity ahead of time.

Many kinds of things we humans do, rather, have us formulate in mind what we want as the goal of what we do before we do it. If you get caught up in cold weather, for example, you may consider activity directed to the goal of getting warm, like putting on a jacket or warming yourself by making a fire **before** you actually do those things. That's goal directed behavior. We should make it clear

before going any further that everything an organism does is either SR, stimulus-response behavior or goal directed behavior. Bees only do the SR stuff. We do both, but mostly we humans do goal directed behavior.

Let's put all that on the back burner for the moment to take a look at what social organisms do generally that non-social organisms, be they human or insect, don't do. Social organisms tend to restrain their self-interested behaviors for the good for the group. Biologically optimal and in the self-interest of a male animal, for example, is to beat up rivals in reproductive competition and then mate with as many females that are available in order to maximize the number of offspring he brings into the world. This is unarguably the best strategy from an evolutionary standpoint for an individual male as made clear with mathematical proof in a later section we'll do and also in countless instances of male mating battles in the animal world seen in hundreds of nature documentaries on TV.

Restraint in reproductive activity by individuals, though, is by far the better strategy for the group as violent competition between males for mates is not conducive to the social cohesion and group size needed for successful competition between rival groups, loss in which can threaten extinction.

How the bees accomplish the reproductive orderliness that's worked for eons for them, we won't spend time on a biology lecture with here. The important thing, rather is to make clear that what the bees do comes about purely genetically, while in humans, there's a lot of emotion involved in reproductive restraint and for a good many people, a lot of unpleasant, unhappy emotion, the kind that can readily lead to depression and suicide and to discord between people, including at the violent level.

The problem with trying to explain that and other social problems laden with emotion is that no phenomenon is as ephemeral as our emotions and as difficult to explain even in the natural state let alone when emotions are dysfunctional. The vague explanations of emotion, healthy and dysfunctional, given in the psychobabble terminology of the ideologically tainted, pseudo-science of psychology do little to solve the problem of properly understanding what our emotions are and how they operate.

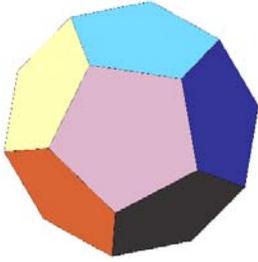
That goes beyond being just an intellectual shortcoming, for the extreme control put on people to optimize social order and efficiency tears individuals down emotionally to the extent that eventually, and soon it is coming to appear, their collective unhappiness expressed in discord will eventually tear all of society down to a level of aggression within and between societies that very well lead to mankind exterminating nuclear war.

However this issue, a most contentious one, may extend to harsh political conflict between competing ideologies and religious beliefs, the problem cannot be clarified and resolved without first getting a hold on the elemental issue of what exactly our emotions are and how they operate in their influence and control of our behaviors.

To that end, before assigning a fate of punitive execution to the terribly callous people who make up the ruling class or to the terribly disobedient people who make up the rebels against law and order, we must thoroughly understand emotion especially how it controls our goal directed behaviors. And to do that we enlist the aid of an engineering science called ***control theory***.

Control theory is the engineering science that underpins control engineering. It is an excellent foundation for understanding how our lives are controlled by society because control theory is shown to be unarguably correct by its success in having explained and developed real things like RADAR, robots and the thermostatic heaters and air conditioners most of us have in our homes. As we shall see, control theory can also be used to make clear sense out of human emotion and behavior in the societies people live in today that can be shown to be as highly controlled and ordered as the insect societies of bees, ants and termites.

This approach to understanding man in the modern era addresses three contentious issues. Are we free or are we controlled in the societies we live in? What are the causes of what we do and of what happens to us in life? And what determines what is good to do and what is bad to do, the moral issue? Control theory answers these questions with mathematical precision and provides a strategy for solving life's most pressing problems.



1. Control Theory

There is little point in giving an introductory sketch of control theory in ordinary language for the beauty and power of this engineering science lies in the firm logic and clarity of the mathematical language it is generally expressed in for the engineer who use it. That can be understood in the most direct way by laying out its basic principles with a simple control system like the thermostat regulated room heater we are all familiar with. This, in turn, will lead to a precise clarification of centrally important concepts like control, freedom and happiness whose meanings are often hard to grasp from the spin put on them in journalism, commercial advertising and other forms of functional propaganda. And that, in turn, will lead to a solution to the two most troubling problems ordinary people have in life, abusive control from economic and police coercion and, when it may come as it always does eventually in history, the horror of war, particularly destructive in this era of nuclear weapons.

That solution, we shall see, lies in mankind's collective development of One World With No Weapons, a worldwide social system that intrinsically abolishes war and the worst aspects of social control. The bit of mathematics homework entailed in making oneself familiar with the basic aspects of control theory is well worth the saving of mankind, in body and spirit, that will be the product of this effort.

Consider as we start out on this intellectual and political journey, a thermostatic heater that keeps a room warm to a temperature set on the thermostat of $\theta_s=72^\circ$ Fahrenheit. This θ_s temperature is called the **set point** of the control system. When the room temperature, θ , is less than the θ_s temperature set on the thermostat, a heating element like a furnace **automatically** turns on to bring heat to the room until its temperature, θ , increases to the thermostat setting of $\theta_s=72^\circ$, at which point the furnace **automatically** shuts off.

The difference between the temperature set on the thermostat, θ_s , and temperature of the room, θ , is called the **system error**, ϵ , (epsilon). For our thermostatic heater, the ϵ error is, hence, expressed as

$$(1) \quad \epsilon = \theta_s - \theta$$

The ϵ error is a central concept in control theory. A control system operates generally by acting to **eliminate the system error**, ϵ . For this heating system, the error is

$$(1a) \quad \epsilon = \theta_s - \theta = 72^\circ - 32^\circ = 40^\circ$$

As heat is added to the room, the $\epsilon=40^\circ$ error is progressively eliminated until the temperature set on the thermostat is reached at $\theta=\theta_s=72^\circ$. And at that point the heater automatically shuts off. To repeat, when an error is present in the system, $\epsilon = (\theta_s - \theta) > 0$, the heater **automatically** turns ON and when the error is eliminated, $\epsilon = (\theta_s - \theta) = 0$, the heater **automatically** turns OFF. This automaticity of turning ON and OFF in this control system can be shown to also control human emotion and behavior. But to show that in the most complete way, we must now look at a thermostatic heater of a more advanced kind called a **proportional heater**. It is called that because the greater the error, that is, the colder the room is, the greater the number of heating elements in the furnace that are turned on and the faster the room gets heated up.

The rate of heating is proportional to how cold the room is and, thus, to how large the ϵ system error is. And that is succinctly expressed mathematically in a **differential equation** that takes the form of what is called in control theory, **First Order Negative Feedback Control**. We will take great pains to explain the symbols you see in it below in as simple a way as possible.

$$(1b) \quad d\theta/dt = (1/R_\theta C_\theta)(\theta_s - \theta) = (1/R_\theta)(1/C_\theta)\epsilon$$

The $d\theta/dt$ term is the rate or speed of heating. You can see from Eq1b that this $d\theta/dt$ measure of how fast the room gets heated, is not only a function of and proportional to the error, $\epsilon = (\theta_s - \theta)$, but also to the $(1/R_\theta)$ and the $(1/C_\theta)$ terms in the equation.

R_θ is the **thermal resistivity**. Some substances conduct heat faster than others, copper and silver being two examples of heat conductors that have small R values that indicate that they don't resist the flow of heat through them very much.

From Eq1b, we see that the smaller the R_θ resistivity, the larger is $d\theta/dt$ and the faster the room heats up.

The C_θ term in Eq1b is the **heat capacity**. This is a measure of how much of an input of heat energy is needed to obtain an output of one degree of temperature in whatever is being heated. Asbestos has a high heat capacity. The greater the C_θ heat capacity of a substance, the more heat is needed to increase its temperature and from Eq1b, the slower the rate of heating, $d\theta/dt$.

This tells us clearly that what controls the room heating up is the error, $\varepsilon = (\theta_s - \theta)$, the heat capacity of what is to be heated, C_θ , and the thermal resistivity, R_θ , of the material that conducts the heat from the furnace to the room that is to be heated. Given the synonymy of control and causation, we can also understand $\varepsilon = (\theta_s - \theta)$, C_θ , and R_θ to be the causes of the room heating up.

It is further helpful to appreciate the C_θ heat capacity as an **internal factor** on the rate of heating and the R_θ thermal resistivity as an **environmental factor** on the rate. Having now developed these two factors of R_θ and C_θ from the textbook control theory understanding of a proportional heater, we return to the initial, simpler thermostatic heater we first considered as delivering heat and increasing the temperature of a room not in proportion to the $\varepsilon = (\theta_s - \theta)$ error but at a **constant rate** that is a function solely of R_θ and C_θ , both of which have constant values.

$$(1c) \quad d\theta/dt = (1/R_\theta)(1/C_\theta)$$

The above should be understood as telling us that the room heats up at a constant rate when the room is cold, that is, when there is an ε error, until the room temperature reaches the set point temperature on the thermostat, $\theta = \theta_s = 72^\circ$, at which point the error is eliminated, $\varepsilon = (\theta_s - \theta) = 0$, and the heater shuts off.

This also provides a general template for **goal directed** behavior. The goal of the thermostatic heater of Eq1c was for the heater to achieve the temperature set on the thermostat, θ_s , the rate at which this goal is achieved being $d\theta/dt$.

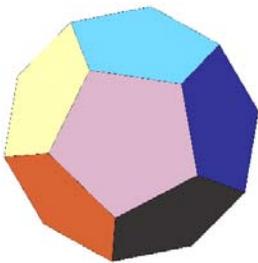
Instead of θ_s degrees of temperature being desired as the goal, consider the goal of obtaining V dollars as the set point of a control system. This is a very general operation considering one can buy just about anything desired with money. If we apply the control theory analysis of Eq1c to this general behavior, we can write in parallel to Eq1c

$$(1d) \quad dV/dt = (1/R)(1/C)$$

In the above, dV/dt is the rate at which money is obtained. R as the resistance to achieving can be understood as the time it takes to do the behavior and C in parallel to C_θ is the input of one (1) unit of activity to get the money relative to the amount of money obtained in V dollars as the output of the behavior.

To spell that out in the most precise terms, we need first to understand and make clear that goal directed behavior is generally an activity that **tries** or **attempts** to achieve a goal but doesn't necessarily achieve it. When a person's desired goal is to thread a needle, for example, it often isn't achieved, at least not on one try. In that regard, we may say that there is a **probability** of success associated with the behavior of acting to thread a needle on one shot.

In that way we want to consider behaviors directed to the goal of obtaining money that have a probability of success not necessarily certain or sure. This approach will develop mathematical functions for the basic human emotions like hope, fear, anxiety, disappointment, relief, security and dismay.



2. The Basic Emotions of Goal Directed Behavior

A specific behavior that has a probability of achieving the goal of getting money and is relatively easy to analyze mathematically in terms of the control theory basics we've been looking at above is of a person trying to obtain money, say V dollars, playing a casino game whose probability of awarding a cash prize is Z .

Indeed, some would say the most common goal of all the adult inhabitants of the human bee hive is getting money. And right up there with that is the other never ending goal people have of not losing money. Using a casino game to analyze

these very familiar behaviors is great mathematically both because how much money you win or lose in a casino game is a number, how many dollars you may win or lose, and because the likelihood you feel of winning and losing are exactly specified items as the probability of winning or losing, again a number even if the player does not always know what it is.

Not good about casinos is that players most often lose money because the probabilities of winning are clearly against them. What is good about casinos for our purposes, though, is not only that the mathematics of games of chance is simple and clear, but also that gambling is heavy with emotion. This allows for a succinct mathematical development and representation of the emotions felt by the gamblers like hope and fear and relief and the thrill of winning, which basic emotion functions can then be applied to all behaviors people do even outside of casino gambling. That makes the casino type games we'll consider important for analysis because for many of the other behaviors we do in life, the probabilities of success and failure and the value of a win or a loss, as on a Saturday night date, don't have firm numbers associated with them that allow them to be analyzed with mathematical precision.

The game of chance we'll use to mathematically illustrate what we have been saying is called **Lucky Numbers**, the most simple casino game imaginable. The **lucky numbers** on a pair of dice in the game are the

(2) |2|, |3|, |4|, |10|, |11| & |12|

This Lucky Numbers game is very simple. The throw of one of the lucky numbers on a roll of a pair of dice awards a prize of $V = \$120$. Rolling a number on the dice that is not a lucky number awards no prize, though there is no penalty or cost for failure to roll a lucky number.

Now let's get on with playing the game. The probability of winning the V dollar prize derives from the individual probabilities of the various numbers of |2| through |12| that can be rolled on the dice. They are:

(2a) $p|2| = 1/36$; $p|3| = 2/36$; $p|4| = 3/36$; $p|5| = 4/36$; $p|6| = 5/36$;
 $p|7| = 6/36$; $p|8| = 5/36$; $p|9| = 4/36$; $p|10| = 3/36$; $p|11| = 2/36$; $p|12| = 1/36$

The probability, Z, of rolling a lucky number is the sum of the probabilities of the lucky numbers in Line 1 that are listed on Line 2.

$$(3) \quad Z = 1/36 + 2/36 + 3/36 + 3/36 + 2/36 + 1/36 = 12/36 = 12/36 = 1/3$$

Now let's return for a moment or two to the control theory Eq1c that we said underpins this process,

$$(1d) \quad dV/dt = (1/R)(1/C)$$

The dV/dt term in the above represents the rate at which money is awarded on average per each roll of the dice in repeated play. As the $Z=1/3$ probability stipulates winning $V=\$120$ on average every 3 rolls, the on average payout per roll must be

$$(1e) \quad dV/dt = ZV = \$40$$

The ZV term is familiar to mathematical scientists as the ***mathematical expectation*** of a game of chance.

To calculate the \$40 rate in Eq1e per time unit, we next consider the R resistance as the time it takes to do the behavior of rolling the dice, which we might stipulate as, for example, one toss every hour. Clearly the greater this R resistance measured as time, the longer it will take to achieve the goal or set point of obtaining the V dollar prize. This take on R understands dV/dt more precisely as a payoff of \$40 per hour.

To derive the ZV mathematical expectation from the control theory developed Eq1d, we understand the C term in it, in parallel to the C_θ heat capacity as the ratio of input energy to output temperature as the ratio of a unit input toss of the dice to their average payoff of ZV or $C=1/ZV$. That clearly derives Eq1e from Eq1d as

$$(1f) \quad dV/dt = (1/R)(1/C) = (1/hr.)(1/1/ZV) = \$40/hr.$$

We have enough background material now to derive succinct functions for all of the basic emotions of goal directed behavior. We will analyze emotion as an

instance of biological negative feedback control or homeostasis in greater detail later in Section 4.

To continue now, we see that the probability, U , of failing to roll a lucky number on one roll, also called the **uncertainty** in rolling a lucky number, is

$$(4) \quad U = 1 - Z$$

Its value for this game is $U = 1 - Z = 2/3$. When the game is played repeatedly, the amount of money won **on average** per roll, called the **expected value** of the game, has been well characterized in math textbooks for the last two hundred years as **mathematical expectation**. Specifically, the **expectation** as the product of the V prize that can be won and the Z probability of winning it is given the symbol E

$$(5) \quad E = ZV = dV/dt$$

For this $V = \$120$ prize and $Z = 1/3$ probability of winning it, the expectation is

$$(5a) \quad E = ZV = (1/3)(\$120) = \$40$$

To interpret the E expected value as the intensity of pleasure in the emotion of expectation or **hope** felt prior to throwing the dice, we start with a couple of self-evident axioms. The first is that getting money is **pleasant** with the degree or intensity of that pleasure in proportion to the amount of money gotten. The more V dollars you get, the greater the pleasure.

Is the relationship of money to pleasure linear? If, for example, getting \$120 makes you feel good, does getting \$240 make you feel twice as good? If it is, then we say that the V dollars gotten is a **linear** measure of the intensity of the pleasure felt in getting it.

The pleasure in getting money could also be **marginal** whereby getting \$240 gives you more pleasure than getting \$120 but less than twice as much. If so, then we could represent the pleasure felt as a measure of the V dollars gotten with some mathematical function that indicates such marginality such as a **logarithmic** function of the V dollars.

Clearly, given the most reasonable presumption that the pleasure experienced in getting money must be an increasing function of the money gotten, unarguably there **must be** some function that shows this increasing relationship between pleasure and money, be it a linear or marginal function.

We need not, though, choose between a linear or marginal proportionality of pleasure to money because, as we will see, the overall mathematical picture of our emotional machinery remains the same whatever function, linear or logarithmic or other we may use to represent the relationship between getting money and the pleasure it brings. With this in mind, though, we will use the linear relationship between money and pleasure because it is computationally the easiest to deal with.

A corollary to this self-evident axiom is that the greater the amount of V dollars **expected** to some probability, Z , the greater the pleasure in the $E=ZV$ expectation. Again we specify this correspondence of E expectation to E as the intensity of pleasure to be linear for the same reason of mathematical simplicity we argued for the pleasure in receiving V dollars. This understands the pleasure in anticipating a win in the Lucky Numbers game, $ZV=(1/3)(\$120)=\40 , to be twice as much as in one where the prize awarded is $V=\$60$ and, hence, the ZV expectation of it prior to the roll of the dice, $ZV=(1/3)(\$60)=\20 .

This axiom and corollary are important because they validate the use of the linear function of the mathematical expectation of Eq5, $E=ZV$, for specifying the pleasure in our emotional expectation or hopes of winning the money. That is important to stress because $E=ZV$ provides a powerfully clear representation of our emotion of hope and of the emotions we shall consider next that are related to and derived from this $E=ZV$ function for hope. Developing our emotions in this precise functional way renders them no longer the vague, ephemeral phenomena our emotions have presented themselves as for time immemorial. The above self-evident premises now lead us into playing the Lucky Numbers game to see how the various mathematical functions for our basic emotions develop from this game.

Later on, we will introduce a parallel Lucky Numbers used to develop the emotions associated with losing money which assumes that losing money is **unpleasant** with the displeasure taken to be linearly proportional to the amount of money lost. In both kinds of games, to win money and to avoid losing money, it

is assumed, at least to begin with, that the Lucky Numbers player uses the mathematically correct value of the Z probability for the game. For the player could also incorrectly **suppose** a probability of winning other than the true mathematical probability, say assume $Z=1/2$ rather than the $Z=1/3$ for the standard Lucky Numbers game. This very much affects the emotions felt in the game as we shall see later. In our playing of the game to begin with, though, it will be understood that the player is aware of and is using the mathematically correct Z probability and hence, the correct $E=ZV$ expectation.

Before we get into the game proper, though, let's first consider how we can objectively measure the amount of pleasure anticipated in the hope of winning. Eq5a, $E=ZV=\$40$, says that the E expectation has a \$40 pure cash value. One interpretation is the average payoff per roll. This $E=\$40$ expectation value of Eq5a **also** has an interpretation as the intensity of pleasurable **hope** one has in anticipation of winning the prize of $V=\$120$. Since you are by the laws of statistics fairly sure of getting **on average** \$40 every throw, it would make sense that the \$40 you are anticipating is a reasonable expectation of what you actually will be getting. From that perspective, the pleasure of anticipating the \$40 should give the same amount of pleasure as \$40 cash in hand or close to it.

As should be clear, if you increase the probability of winning the $V=\$120$ prize to $Z=2/3$, as by using the numbers 4, 5, 6, 7, 8 & 9 as the lucky numbers, the average win per play would double to $ZV=\$80$ and bring about greater pleasure in your expectation or hopes of winning. In similar fashion, if we increase the V prize from $V=\$120$ to $V=\$180$ with the probability kept at $Z=1/3$, the pleasure in your hope of winning money also increases as $E=ZV=(1/3)(\$180)=\60 .

Now consider that that there are two outcomes possible when you roll the dice in the Lucky Numbers game. You can roll a lucky number and win V dollars, in which case **what is realized** is the $V=\$120$ prize specified as $R=V=\$120$. Or you may fail to roll a lucky number, in which case **what is realized**, nothing, is specified as $R=0$. This R labelling of the outcome is not only a specification of what is realized in pure cash terms but also of the amount of pleasure realized. You obtain $R=V=\$120$ worth of pleasure if you win the money and $R=0$ pleasure if you fail to win the money.

This last statement would seem to suggest counterintuitively that when you fail to roll a lucky number and win nothing, $R=0$, that no emotion at all is experienced as a result of that failure. An objection from common experience is raised immediately to this because the emotion of **disappointment** is universally felt when the expectation or hope of winning the $V=\$120$ is dashed by failure to throw a lucky number. A mathematical function for disappointment of $-ZV$ immediately arises as the negation or denial of one's $E=ZV$ hopes from the failure to win. We specify that disappointment with the symbol, T , as signifies a **transition emotion**, that label used for reasons to be made clear later.

$$(6) \quad T = -ZV$$

The intuitive sensibility of the $T = -ZV$ function for disappointment is clear from a number of perspectives. On the one hand, much as the implied positive sign of $E=ZV$ can be interpreted as denoting a **pleasurable** feeling, that of hopeful expectation, the negative sign in $T = -ZV$ suggests an unpleasant feeling, which disappointment universally is. Further as argument for the reasonableness of using $T = -ZV$ to represent disappointment, universal emotional experience tells us that the displeasure in disappointment is greater the greater the V amount of dollars hoped for but that were not obtained and is greater the greater the Z probability for the game presumed prior to rolling the dice.

Let us examine the latter proposition in some detail. In our Lucky Numbers game with $V=\$120$ and $Z=1/3=.333$, the disappointment from failing to roll a lucky number on a toss has measure as

$$(7) \quad T = -ZV = -(1/3)(\$120) = -\$40$$

Consider by contrast an expanded set of lucky numbers that allows you to win with the roll of **any number** on the dice except snake eyes, the $|2|$. This raises the Z probability of winning the $V=\$120$ prize from $Z=1/3=.333$ to $Z=31/32=.969$, which in turn raises the expectation of winning from $E=\$40$ in Eq5a to $E=ZV=(31/32)(120)=\$116.25$, which raises the displeasure of disappointment if you do toss snake eyes and fail to get a lucky number to

$$(8) \quad T = -ZV = -\$116.25$$

The difference in the intensities of the displeasure of the disappointment suggested by $T = -ZV = -\$40$ in Eq7 versus $T = -ZV = -\$116.25$ in Eq8, much more for the latter, fits our intuitive sense that having high hopes or expectations of winning makes for greater disappointment when you fail to win.

To make the case further, let's next consider a variation of the Lucky Numbers game where the **only** number on the dice considered a lucky number one can win with is the |12|, which makes the probability of winning very low at $Z=1/36$. In such a game, the player has a very low expectation of winning of $E=ZV=\$3.75$, so failure to win produces much less disappointment because there was little expectation of his winning to begin with, as quite fits the $T = -ZV$ formulation of Eq6 for the disappointment felt as seen in the low value of that displeasure

$$(9) \quad T = -ZV = -\$3.75$$

Now we see three emotions we have developed for this failure to succeed. We see the initial $E=ZV$ expectation or hope of winning. We see the $R=0$ lack of realized emotion from failing to win. And we see the $T = -ZV$ disappointment that comes from failure. And we also see from careful observation of these emotion functions that the three of them fit together quite neatly in a simple equation,

$$(10) \quad T = R - E$$

If we substitute the proper functions for E and R, namely ZV for E from the $E=ZV$ expectation and 0 for R from the $R=0$ realization of failure to win, we obtain the T transition emotion of as

$$(10a) \quad T = R - E = 0 - E = -E = -ZV$$

To show that this $T = R - E$ function is a general **Law of Emotion**, we want next to show that it works whether you win or you lose when you toss the dice. To do that we evaluate T in Eq10 for the case when a toss of the dice **is** successful and the V dollar prize is won, $R=V$. The $R=V$ realization not only represents the fact of money is being achieved or realized but also the amount of pleasure felt in getting $R=V=\$120$ dollars, that is, the joy or elation in getting it. This $R=V$ term also

participates functionally in Eq10,

$T = R - E$, where in conjunction with $E = ZV$ and $Z = 1 - U$ from Eq4, it generates

$$(11) \quad T = R - E = V - ZV = V - (1 - U)V = V - (V - UV) = -(-UV) = UV$$

In our Lucky Numbers game with a $V = \$120$ prize and $Z = 1/3$ and, thus, $U = 2/3$, the T transition emotion that Eq130 predicts you would experience upon winning is

$$(11a) \quad T = UV = (2/3)(\$120) = \$80.$$

This expression suggests from the positive sign of $T = UV = \$80$ that it is a pleasant emotion. What kind of pleasant emotion is it? The universal experience of winning money under uncertainty in a game of chance like this is a feeling of a **thrill** in winning. This tells us that $T = UV$ represents the amount of the pleasure in the thrill, excitement or delight felt in winning the $V = \$120$ prize. (This excitement that arises in the aftermath of winning is not to be mixed up with excitement felt in expectation or anticipation of a win that we shall consider in detail a bit later.)

That this emotional interpretation of $T = UV$ as a thrill, as excitement, is reasonable is evidenced from common experience. Receiving $R = V$ dollars is always pleasant in itself, even if there is no uncertainty in getting it as in getting a sure paycheck at the end of the every week. But when there is uncertainty as to whether you'll be getting money or not as in this gambling scenario, there is an additional pleasure in the thrill of winning under uncertainty as when $U > 0$ and $Z < 1$ prior to the throw.

The $T = UV$ function of Eq11 interpreted as the excitement or thrill of winning under uncertainty also fits emotional reality in that this UV thrill in winning money is experienced as greater the greater the V amount of money won and also greater the greater was the U uncertainty felt in getting the money prior to rolling the dice. This relationship between the uncertainty of obtaining something of value and the thrill felt upon actually getting it is clear in the thrill that children feel in unwrapping their Christmas presents on Christmas morning. Their uncertainty about what they're going to be getting in the wrapped presents under the tree is what makes them feel that extra pleasure of the thrill in opening them. This excitement is an additional pleasure on top of the elation or joy in getting the

gift itself, for that added thrill is not felt if somebody knows ahead of time what their gifts are and has no uncertainty about it.

We obtain a more complete sense of the anticipatory emotions by expanding the $E=ZV$ expectation using the $Z=1-U$ relationship from Eq4.

$$(12) \quad E = ZV = V - UV$$

Our expectation or hopes in the form of $E= V -UV$ shows the expectation, E , to be a compound emotion made up of two components represented by the V and $-UV$ terms in Eq12. The V term imbedded in Eq12 as part of the E expectation represents our *desire* or *wish* or anticipation of the cash prize in its V entirety. It and the emotion associated with it of pleasurable desire are different from the $R=V$ realization of the money when it is won and of *its* emotion of joy or elation. As part of E expectation, desire as the thought of getting V elicits pleasure in proportion to the amount of V dollars desired or wished for.

The $-UV$ term in $E = V -UV$ specifies the *anxiousness* or *anxiety* or *worry* or *concern* one feels about whether or not one will get the V prize that is desired. This $-UV$ anxiety is tagged as an unpleasant emotion by its minus sign. The $-UV$ term also indicates that its displeasure is proportional to the size of the V prize that one has anxiety about getting and the U amount of uncertainty one has about getting the prize. Hence the $E = V -UV$ form of expectation in Eq12 is telling us that *realistic expectation* includes not only the wish or desire for something of value, here V , but also the anxiousness or concern that what is desired may not be gotten, an unpleasant feeling here measured $-UV$.

The purpose for behavior of the $-UV$ anxiousness that can arise in our emotional machinery is to optimize achieving a desired goal via the displeasure of the $-UV$ anxiousness stimulating a search to minimize the displeasure in the $-UV$ of the path taken. Assume, for example, that what is desired is a $V=\$120$ prize and that there are two games that can be played to get it. One of them is the standard game that has $E=ZV=\$40$ and $-UV= -\$80$ as its measure of anxiousness about winning. Now consider another $V=\$120$ game available where only the |2|, |3| & |4| are the lucky numbers. This specifies $Z=1/12$, and expectation of

$E=ZV=(1/12)(\$120)=\10 and a measure of anxiousness about winning of $-UV=-(11/12)(\$120)=-\110 . The lesser anxiousness of $-UV=-\$80$ with the standard game has it selected to be played.

Before we go much further with our mathematical analysis, to clarify exactly what we are talking about with $-UV$ note that the words anxiousness, anxiety and worry we have used for $-UV$ have various shades of meaning when used in ordinary discourse often depending on context. This has us give a more technical term for $-UV$, that of ***meaningful uncertainty***, a sensible term in its combining the ***uncertainty*** in the U probability of failing to win with the V term for dollars, certainly a ***meaningful*** item for people generally.

We should also include in this refinement of our understanding of anxiousness or meaningful uncertainty that those who neglect the $-UV$ term in their $E=V -UV$ expectations and have no sense of anxiousness or the difficulty in achieving a wished for V prize or desired goal are engaging in ***wishful thinking*** in their basing their E expectations solely on their V desire for the prize with no consideration of the $-UV$ uncertainties that may be involved in getting the prize. Wishful thinking is common in children because their wishes and desires to a great extent are satisfied by their parents without the children having to have much $-UV$ anxiousness about whether or not they'll get what they desire or want or wish for. Wishful thinking for adults, though, can be dangerous in its ignoring the difficulty or U uncertainty or improbability of getting what they wish for. Following a ***"Don't worry, be happy,"*** strategy has limited value when worry can lead to success while avoiding worry in a difficult, uncertain situation can lead to failure that may have untoward consequences. Counting on an all-powerful invisible deity to save the world from nuclear war should also be viewed by grownups as dangerous wishful thinking, for the consequences of not understanding the path mankind is going down in that direction will be unforgivably horrible when it is realized.

We see from all of the above that Eq10, $T=R-E$, validly predicts the feeling of disappointment from failure and of the thrill of success under uncertainty. For that reason $T=R-E$ deserves to be understood as a genuine ***Law of Emotion***.

This "big picture" of emotion sketched out by the Law of Emotion makes clear why that it did not matter which corresponding function, linear or logarithmic or otherwise, we used to specify pleasure as a function of V dollars won or anticipated. For consider if we had specified expectation not linearly as $E=ZV$ but non-linearly and logarithmically as

$$(13) \quad E=Z\log V$$

This would have developed the emotion of disappointment from Eq10 as

$$(14) \quad T=R-E= -Z\log V$$

While this would have extended the marginality in the E expectation to the T disappointment, the interrelationship between the variables in the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion as a broad depiction of the emotional machinery of our minds is not at all affected. Check that out further by using the non-linear function for a successful roll or realization, $R=\log V$, to draw the same conclusion.

$$(15) \quad T=R-E=\log V -Z\log V= (1-Z)\log V = U\log V$$

Further evidence that the $T=R-E$ relationship is a fundamental law of nature, of human nature, is provided with a version of the Lucky Numbers game played not to win a V dollar prize but rather to avoid a $v=\$120$ penalty, (Note the small case v used for the cash penalty in contrast to the capital V used for the cash prize.)

The Lucky Numbers penalty game is one a person would avoid if not **forced** to play. Under that circumstances of somehow being compelled to play, the player is able to avoid the $v=\$120$ penalty by throwing one of the |2|, |3|, |4|, |10|, |11| or |12| lucky numbers, which as we saw has a probability of avoiding the $v=\$120$ penalty of $Z=1/3$. The probability of not rolling one of these lucky numbers and of incurring the $v=\$120$ penalty is $U= 1- Z =2/3$. The expectation of paying the penalty is simply the v penalty, prefaced with a negative as $-v$ to show it as a loss of money, multiplied by the U probability of that occurring.

$$(16) \quad E= U(-v)= -Uv$$

With a $v = \$120$ penalty and a $U = 2/3$ probability of having to pay it, the expectation has a measurable value of

$$(17) \quad E = -Uv = -(2/3)(\$120) = -\$80$$

The simplest take on the emotion that $E = -Uv$ represents is the player's **fear** of having to pay the v dollar penalty. The negative sign of $E = -Uv$ tells us this emotion of fear is unpleasant with its intensity greater the greater is the U probability of incurring the v penalty and the greater the size of the v penalty feared. Both of these implications fit common emotional experience.

There are numerous alternative names for $E = -Uv$ fear, all more or less synonymous in basic meaning, apprehension, distress and worry included, each having its own shade of meaning. For that reason we will sometimes also generalize and refer to the $E = -Uv$ fear of incurring a v penalty as **meaningful uncertainty** much as we did with the $-UV$ anxiety of Eq12 that arises from the expectation of the possibility of failing to win a V prize. To distinguish between these two categories of meaningful uncertainty that are so similar in how they feel emotionally, we clarify here that when we speak of fear, we mean fear of loss, $-Uv$, (with a lower case v) and that when we speak of anxiety, we mean anxiety about failure to win, $-UV$, (with a capital V), however much those two words, fear and anxiety, may be used in colloquial conversation interchangeably.

The **realized outcome** for the v penalty game when a lucky number is not thrown and the player must pay the v penalty is $R = -v$. Understood as the **realized emotion** $R = -v$ represents the sadness or grief felt when one must pay a v cash penalty, the more v dollars one is penalized, the greater the displeasure in the loss.

There is also an R realization when a lucky number **is** thrown and no money is lost, $R = 0$. This is not to say that there is no emotion experienced at all when one avoids paying the v penalty by rolling a lucky number. Even though there is $R = 0$ and no realized emotion because no money changes hands, there is yet a T transition emotion felt, which can be derived from the $T = R - E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10 with $E = -Uv$ and $R = 0$.

$$(18) \quad T = R - E = 0 - (-Uv) = Uv$$

This $T=Uv$ emotion is the feeling of **relief** experienced in escaping the v dollar penalty. The positive sign of $T=Uv$ tells us, as fits common experience, that relief is a pleasant emotion with the pleasure in it greater the greater the v loss avoided and the greater the U probability that one will not avoid the $R= -v$ loss. That this fits the common experiencing of relief is illustrated by comparing the standard Lucky Numbers penalty game to one where every number is a lucky number that avoids the v penalty except snake eyes, the $|2|$. In the standard game with $Z=1/3$ and $U=2/3$, we see that $T=Uv=(2/3)(\$120)=40 as the intensity of relief felt. This contrast sharply with the $Z=31/32$ and $U=1/32$ game where every number is a lucky number except snake eyes and the relief as specified from Eq18 is much less as

$$(19) \quad T=Uv=(1/32)(\$120)=$3.75$$

This tells us as fits common emotional experience that when one is fairly sure one is not going to lose, the relief felt when one, indeed, does not lose is minimal. We can also compare the standard penalty game and the low risk game of Eq19 to the other extreme case of only the $|12|$ being the lucky number that avoids the penalty. With an uncertainty of $U=31/32$, we see from Eq18 that this game produces considerable relief as fits common emotional experience

$$(20) \quad T=Uv=(31/32)(\$120)=$116.25$$

We can also use $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10 to generate the T transition emotion felt when the player **fails** to roll a lucky number and **does incur** the v penalty. In that case, with expectation as $E= -Uv$ and the realized emotion specified as $R= -v$, the T transition emotion that results is via $Z=1-U$ from Eq4,

$$(21) \quad T = R - E = -v - (-Uv) = -v + Uv = -v(1-U) = -Zv$$

This $T= -Zv$ transition emotion is the **dismay** felt when a lucky number is not rolled and the v penalty is incurred. The $T= -Zv$ emotion of dismay is an unpleasant feeling as implied by its negative sign and one greater in displeasure

the greater the v penalty incurred and the greater the Z probability felt beforehand of avoiding the penalty. This fits common emotional experience, for when there is a very small Z probability of avoiding the $v=\$120$ penalty, as in the |12| only lucky number game that has $Z=1/32$, while there is still $R=-v$ grief felt in having to pay the $v=\$120$ penalty, there is little of the emotion of dismay, $T=-Zv = -\$3.75$, because of the considerable $U=35/36=.9667$ surety the player had to begin with that the penalty would most likely have to be paid.

We can also use Eq21 to develop expressions for the emotions of **dread** and of **security** that may be felt prior to throwing the dice in the v penalty game. We do that by rendering the $E=-Uv$ fear of paying the penalty in Eq16 via $U=1-Z$ of Eq4 as

$$(22) \quad E = -Uv = -(1-Z)v = -v + Zv$$

In the above, the $-v$ term on the right specifies the **anticipation** of incurring the total v penalty, the **dread** of it we might say. It is an unpleasant emotion as its minus sign implies. The $+Zv$ term in $E = -Uv = -v + Zv$ in Eq142 is the hope or **security** felt of possibly avoiding the penalty, a pleasant feeling as is implied by the positive sign of $+Zv$ that is greater the greater the v penalty feared and greater the Z probability that it might be avoided. This $E = -v + Zv$ rendering of fearful expectation in Eq22 tells us that $E = -Uv$ fear of incurring a v penalty is a compound function of the $-v$ dread of paying the penalty tempered by one's sense of $+Zv$ security or hope that the v penalty might be avoided by rolling a lucky number.

We diverge for a few paragraphs now from our pure mathematical analysis of the emotions to introduce arguably the most important topic for modern mankind in terms of where it is threatening to take us: **violence**. We began our analysis of the v penalty Lucky Numbers game by saying after Eqs16&17 that "the simplest take on the emotion that $E = -Uv$ represents is the player's **fear**." Consider carefully, though, that this penalty incurring game is not something anybody would play unless they were forced to play it as by some agent or agency. This perspective has us consider behaviors other than rolling the dice in the Lucky Numbers game to avoid the v penalty. An alternate response would be **running away** or

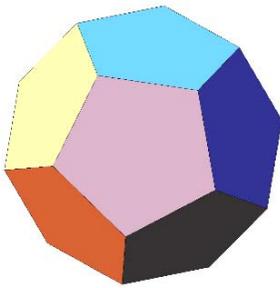
otherwise **escaping** the agent who is forcing the player to play this game. Note that relief is also felt in escaping the feared situation.

In the case where one is afraid of a threatening outcome or person, there is also a natural tendency for fear of the threat to transform into **anger**, an emotion directed in this to destructive behavior towards the agent, to killing or otherwise disabling the agent as one might do to a robber trying to steal your money outright. It should be obvious that success in such an aggressive defense of yourself and your money would also bring about **relief** to the player as does rolling a lucky number that avoids losing the money. Indeed, violent behavior is a common response towards **any** potentially harmful agent, be it a bee that might sting you or that robber we just talked about, neither of which a potential victim hesitates to kill if that alternative is possible.

Speaking of aggression, we should also introduce another important concept in that area, namely the release of anger that may originate from an agent's abuse but is directed toward an innocent victim when destructive behavior towards the agent is not feasible. This is called **redirecting** the aggressive feelings and behaviors that arise from agent to a third party who had nothing to do with the instigating aggressive behavior of the agent. This **redirected aggression** towards an innocent third party victim that can partly resolve the unpleasant emotions stirred up by an agent and provide some relief from them is the cause of a good deal of the violence we see in the world. While it can occur at as low a level as just kicking your dog to get some emotional relief from the boss beating up on you at work, redirected aggression can also rise to the level of mass murder and even as a cause of war from a society's bottled up anger and that arises from internal abuse hate when it is released on a nation or race of people who have little to nothing to do with the unpleasant intragroup actions that actually cause the unhappiness.

Two last things for this section should also be pointed out. One is that modern weapons from guns to bombs make all acts of aggression significantly more destructive and horrible in their outcome, whatever the similarity in the emotions that produce that aggression. An angry man with a loaded gun in his hand is

significantly more dangerous than an angry man without a weapon. And the other is that emotional pain that seeks mitigation by redirection to an innocent victim derives not just from being attacked by someone too powerful to retaliate against but also from the unhappiness that comes from the loss and/or frustration of love, the nature of which we explore both in the next section in story-form, much to the relief of those who struggled through the math in this section. It is important to read because it is a realistic depiction of adult love, a relationship that has more distortions in it in our public culture than any other subject save freedom and control. One cannot derive a sound science of love and interdependence from bad data.



3. Love That Lasted 47 Years

The first time Peter saw Ruth - this is back in 1973 - she was standing on the porch of the Point Reyes Youth Hostel just North of San Francisco with a small child in her arms. Even from his distant vantage point off in the middle of the hostel parking lot, Pete could see that she was very pretty, like “a model in a *Woman’s Day* ad” were the words that jumped into his mind, though his second spontaneous thought was that she looked the type, innocent and pure in some way who might call the police on him if he made advances.

The next morning, with little pre-thought, he did just that. Shortly before lunch for the hostlers, he saw the 3-year-old toddler standing away from the mother right behind a car that was parked on a moderately steep incline towards the little girl in such a way that if the car’s brake suddenly did not hold, near as unlikely as the sun setting in the East, it would have rolled back on her. Dismissing the

mechanical reality, he picked the child up in his arms and returned her “safely” to the mother, who immediately upon receiving her began semi-scolding the girl-child that she couldn’t have a second carton of milk.

“Let her drink it as she likes,” this fellow who looked not unlike a Che Guevara who never combed his hair or beard said to Ruth, who then gave the child the additional milk, for she trusted his tone and, indeed, having the second carton to drink quickly saw the child smiling and happy whatever Ruth’s initial overblown concerns about how it might affect the child’s digestion.

This was the Saturday morning of a weekend class outing for Ruth’s 12-year-old son. Stepping inside the Youth Hostel for breakfast, she then pointed out her son to Peter and said, “Look at his eyes. I feel terrible about what they say.” Taken back for a second, for what mother suggests openly that her son did not turn out so well, Peter replied honestly, “He looks fine to me, no worse than other boys his age.” And better than most, Peter thought to himself, though he was affected by the level and openness of *her* concern about him that told whoever heard her words that something was significantly wrong in this woman’s life.

Her unhappiness was broader and deeper, he found as they chatted on and on through the afternoon into early evening, his dramatically piercing eyes locked on hers as they spoke. Ruth’s husband was a Lutheran minister and they had spent the last ten years as missionaries. When Ruth told Pete that they were missionaries to Japan, Peter near laughed out loud and Ruth made no effort to conceal her own contempt and sense of ridicule at her station in life for the last ten years. Things began to make more sense for Pete after Ruth elaborated that her father was a minister also, along with her husband in the most fundamentalist sect of the two million strong LCMS. And that he and Ruth’s mother, the type who believed that Jesus actually talked to her every day, had effectively married Ruth off to her husband who was a student in the father’s seminary class in “stewardship”, how to squeeze the tithing money out of parishioners.

Without her saying it specifically, it gradually became clear to Pete that Ruth’s husband, James, was a total “schlub.” It also became clear as she wove her story through the near dozen hours they talked across the kitchen table in the hostel

that the oriental eyed toddler had been adopted as a newborn at her husband's insistence in order to look all the more pious to the potential Japanese James was eager to save for Christ as would also rack up the points needed for him to rise in the church hierarchy.

What was also told, not that evening but a week or so later, was that Ruth had been having an intimate relationship with a college age, ski bum type who was attending mission church services ostensibly as a potential convert. When the gossip about their affair on mission condoned, weekend ski trips got back to James, he was devastated when she admitted it and fell to the floor writing around - like bacon frying in a frying pan, she said - and began admitting himself to having had sex with animals on the family farm in Harrold, Texas he grew up on, much of which might have been a weird squeezing out of his having had extended sex with his retarded fellow farm-boy cousin, Larry, so rumors had suggested.

When the gossip about Ruth's affair with the young supposed convert hit the fan, it did so all over the 30 LCMS missionary couple entourage in Japan. The affect was so devastating to common morality that within the year 29 of them, including Ruth's family of course, were recalled to the States by the LCMS head office. James was devastated at first and then furious and hateful, trying to rape her on one occasion. He had given Ruth much latitude to do as she pleased outside of the minor mission tasks assigned to her like cleaning the mission church and baking the Holy Communion bread. Indeed, through one of their potential converts, a TV producer, she was hired as a commercial model on Tokyo TV for six years selling canned miso soup, curdled bean soup, to the Japanese public with the implied message being "pretty American woman loves Koiten Miso Soup." Pete was right on the money with his first impression of her as looking like a model in a magazine.

While this sounds like a poor, grade B, soap opera to be taken for granted in this day and age of weird, strained and broken relationships, Ruth's infidelity not only triggered the grand exodus of near the entirety of this Lutheran sect's mission to Japan, but also great consternation in her parents for her minister father right at this critical time was running for Texas District President of the Lutheran Church Missouri Synod. This scandal of infidelity in his daughter, against her minister-missionary husband no less, was not helpful and, indeed, he lost that election.

Lots of anger was headed towards Ruth once she got back to the States, which wasn't very much before when Pete met her at the youth hostel, at which point Ruth was feeling very unhappy just about everything in life.

So much so was this the case that she took to a marathon reading of psychology self-help paperbacks, one of which she told him she had brought with her to the youth hostel.

"Junk," Said Pete in the same sure tone that characterized his initial advice to Ruth about the child having a second carton of milk to drink. "It's all bullshit. Unhappiness comes pretty much entirely from somebody abusing you and the only real time solution to it isn't to rearrange your thinking and attitude, but to avoid the abusers or confront them head-on if you can.

The intersection of psychology with this patently, end of the line marriage went beyond Ruth reading these self-help books, for the reason the family came to the San Francisco area was for James to obtain a Master's Degree in "pastoral counseling" at a Presbyterian seminary in San Rafael in the northern part of the Bay Area, a reasonable switch in careers for someone who had been tarnished in his role of minister from Ruth's scandalous infidelity. Moreover, James had arranged for two psychiatrists from the seminary faculty, one of them one of James's instructors, to meet with Ruth and himself in a kind of marriage counseling session.

"Don't do it! Don't go." Pete shouted out as soon as he heard the details of this meeting that had been set up. He was adamant in this advice because he knew from his time on the street that two psychiatrists had the power by law to sign a person they considered to be critically mentally ill off to involuntary commitment. That was double scary because the line James and Ruth's parents were spinning to save face for themselves was that Ruth's infidelity in the face of her being mother to four children was evidence of mental illness.

"Don't go!" Pete repeated in a tone that struck Ruth as both a command and a very worried plea on his part.

The next morning, Sunday, the contingent of students from the San Rafael public school system and its accompanying parents were loading their cars to go home. There was little time left for Pete and Ruth to share any more of their life

experiences. At some point in their saying goodbye, though, Pete clutched spontaneously at the upper part of Ruth's arm. And that was enough to trigger an invitation from her, "Would you like to come to dinner at our house sometime?"

Pete half smiled and answered, "Three doesn't go." Of course, three didn't go. Indeed, as their very close conversation the night before had come to an end, Pete had the loose thought of trying to sleep with her immediately, but, on second thought, that would be an extreme effort given the nature of her school sponsored trip and that he had just met her that weekend.

"I love you," he thought as she stepped into the car that would take her away. And he held that same thought through the night, fairly sure he would never see her again. Should he have been bolder? Finally, he fell asleep just as the sun was rising Monday morning. Peter Calabria was awakened shortly after by one of the youth hostel's managers. "There's a phone call here asking for somebody whose last name begins with a K. I think that's got to be you." And it was. It was Ruth calling that morning to tell him that she canceled the marriage counseling, potential trap, meeting and wanted to come out immediately to see him.

The best sex in life is nobody else's business. So, we shall skip the short story pornography and jump to the punchline of Pete's ardent and at times forceful sex play followed by Ruth's sounds of pleasure at the height of it.

When dawn came on Tuesday morning, two thoughts came to Pete's mind. The first was that he had never seen a woman look so beautiful, not in person or in a movie or magazine. And the second that he announced openly to her was that he was so animal-like in love with her that he would die for her, even kill for her if it came to it. That love would last for the next forty-five years.

Ruth had driven out on Monday in a late model blue Toyota James had shipped from Japan when they came back to the States. Surprise, surprise the following day, Wednesday, when what should be chugging down the dirt road that led into the youth hostel but the same blue Toyota. Interpreting the moment correctly as one laden with potential big-time trouble, Pete mumbled to himself when he saw a man at the wheel, obviously Ruth's husband, "No problem. He's white." This was not because Pete was a minority individual, black or Hispanic. He was white himself, of Italian/Sicilian heritage, 3rd generation. Rather, his confidence in any

fistfight he thought may come about came from the interesting place Pete had lived in Manhattan prior to coming out to California to escape the heavily polluted New York City air back in 1973 that was screwing up his lungs. To keep expenses as low as possible in New York after dropping out of graduate school with but one credit left to go for his PhD in Biophysics, Pete had lived in a thoroughly black and Puerto Rican neighborhood that he found out after being shot in an attempt to rob him while a taxi driver in the city was the second highest homicide precinct in the country. One New York newspaper billed it the “free fire zone”, a place where city cops never came except to collect the payoff money from the head heroin dealer who lived on East 11th St. between Avenues B and C right across the street from Pete.

To hold his ground, for he felt that there was no point being a political revolutionary against capitalism if one couldn't win the small fights, he wound up taking on a number of the street's toughs, one time outnumbered ten to one, and winning in these battles. This caused Pete to think that if he stepped into the ring with the boxer, Muhammed Ali, he would beat the crap out of him. This is not to say that he would have, but that having this attitude from the head to head fistfights he had won back in New York gave him total confidence, no sweat, in whatever might come to pass from this present driver of Ruth's blue Toyota.

“Are you Joe?” James asked as he stepped out of the car.

“No, but I'm the guy you're looking for,” replied Pete, looking to get the fight he was sure would happen over and done with.

Said James at this point, “Ruth is mentally ill and needs professional help.”

That remark raised Pete's anger to the level of tossing humiliating bites at James. “You better take your eyeglasses off, buddy,” Pete taunted while taking the loose change out of his own pockets and laying it on the picnic table that was on the porch of the youth hostel. But James just continued with his punk-ass bullshit as a minister might do in his effort to get his wife back with pious arguments. This made Pete all the bolder until his ridiculing James about his love for his mother, something Ruth had loosely brought up got James to throw a punch. Their positions out in the sharply inclined hostel parking lot were by this time tilted with James on the high end and Pete a good six inches below him even when just

standing a couple of feet away from him as the argument flared on. This caused James's punch to more push Pete down rather than knock him down to the ground. Whatever the dynamics of how Pete wound up on the ground, James had all the advantage once Pete was on the ground in being up on his feet over Pete.

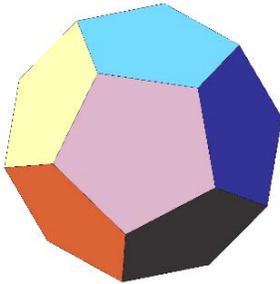
But instead of taking the fight home at that moment of having the edge, James looked away, off to the side, at a pile of boards, two-by-fours, that were sitting eight to ten feet away as might be interpreted as James thinking of using one of them to bash Pete's head in. This moment's hesitation, though, was enough for Pete to arch up on his back and kick with both feet at James stomach and then quickly jump back on his feet.

Pete shouted as he then marched towards James, "Now it's my turn, you bastard." In short order Pete grasped James in a head lock and threw him over his hip, landing squarely on top of James who was flat on his back, underneath Pete. James response to his utterly vulnerable position was to start pulling Pete's hair, which was long in the style of late 60s rebels.

"Let go of my hair, you dumb bastard," the word dumb flying out of Pete's mouth because both of Pete's hands were entirely free in this position to make whatever mess he wanted to out of James face. James did let go, though, and Pete got off and let him get back on his feet again. Yet, James continued to bluff aggressively by trying to hard stare Pete down as they exchanged a few more words. At this, Pete barked angrily, "I could easily have ripped both your eyes out of your head when we were down on the ground and know you're hard staring me?! What kind of punk asshole jerk are you?"

At that, James cast his eyes down and began to walk swiftly in the direction of the Toyota, then getting into it and after rolling down the windows and carefully snapping all the door locks down, drove out of the youth hostel. James was obviously quite subdued at this point and never bothered Ruth again physically, though it was not the end of his causing trouble once Ruth's legally divorcing him got into full swing, something Ruth takes up in her own story in Section 6. For now, though, we want to switch back to mathematical analysis in order to elaborate on the emotions from the most general perspective of its being a biological phenomenon that has much in common with all biological activity in its being a form of homeostasis or biological negative feedback control. Indeed, we

shall see in the final analysis that love itself ultimately derives from this homeostatic dynamic.



4. Emotion as Homeostasis

If you are a jogger, one thing you are sharply aware of is that as you run faster you automatically begin to breathe harder. The physiological logic in this is quite simple and direct. The faster you run, the faster you use up the oxygen your muscles need to operate to keep you keeping on and the more rapidly you breathe in air to replace the internal oxygen being depleted by the running action. This process is quite *automatic* or in the parlance of the mathematical genius, Norbert Wiener, who made all the early discoveries on the subject, is *cybernetic*.

When cybernetics, aka control theory, is applied to biological systems, it takes on the name *homeostasis*. All biological systems have some component of homeostasis in them. If you're stuck outside in Vermont in December in a T-shirt, you'll begin to shiver, this movement of your muscles producing heat to replace the heat lost by the freezing cold. The principle is the same as in the breathing hard to replace oxygen depleted by running fast. Except in shivering from the cold, it is heat lost because of the cold temperature that's being replaced rather than oxygen. The homeostasis principle, we see then, is of keeping central bodily characteristics stable and constant at biologically optimal values.

We want to show that our emotional machinery operates from homeostasis, too. To do that, we'll first elaborate the basic control theory we introduced back in Section 1. Specifically we want to make clear that the system error in a control system can also be specified in negative terms as $-\epsilon$.

$$(25) \quad -\epsilon = -(\theta_s - \theta) = \theta - \theta_s$$

This rendition of the ε error in negative terms specifies it as a **deficit** that the control system needs to make up or compensate for, the heat from the furnace making up for heat lost from the room from the cold weather outside that surrounds the room or apartment being heated. That negative form of error, $-\varepsilon$, is for our simplest heating system laid out in Section 1,

$$(26) \quad -\varepsilon = \theta - \theta_s = 32^\circ - 72^\circ = -40^\circ$$

As heat is added to the room, the $-\varepsilon = -40^\circ$ deficit is made up for by the heat added to raise the room temperature and is eliminated. Specifying the error in negative form as $-\varepsilon$ best suits our use of control theory to explain both the $E=ZV$ emotion of expectation of Eq5 and the $T=R-E$ transition emotion of the Law of Emotion of Eq10. With the control theory concepts under our belt of a control system's set point, θ_s , as the **desired goal of a behavior** and of the system error specified in negative form as $-\varepsilon$, we can clearly explain the Lucky Numbers game played for a V dollar prize and goal directed behavior operating as an instance of homeostasis or negative feedback control. Expressing the expectation of winning V dollars as $E=ZV=V-UV$ of Eq12 allows us to make clear that the goal the person desires in the game, obtaining the V dollar prize, is parallel to the desired θ_s set point temperature on the thermostat and as such is the set point of a feedback control system.

Prior to throwing the dice the player has a mathematical expectation of winning an amount of money in the standard Lucky Numbers game with $V=\$120$ and $Z=1/3$ of $E=ZV$. That emotional position she is in prior to rolling the dice parallels where the room temperature, θ , is to begin with for the heating dynamic. The goal of the player, her wish, her desire, the V dollar prize, parallels the θ_s set point temperature set on the thermostat. The difference between the two states in the Lucky Numbers game, after and before the toss of the dice, assumed successful, $V - ZV$, parallels the $(\theta_s - \theta)$ difference for the heater given in Eq1 that we called its system error, $\varepsilon=(\theta_s - \theta)$, and from that parallel can be called the Lucky Number game's system error.

$$(27) \quad \varepsilon=V-E=V-ZV=V(1-Z)=UV$$

One can also express the system error, as we did in Eq25 for the heating system, in negative form as

$$(28) \quad -\varepsilon=ZV-V= -UV$$

This $-\varepsilon = -UV$ equation for the system error in the Lucky Number game specifies it exactly as the $-UV$ anxiety of Eq12, in which form it is manifest emotionally as the displeasure of the anxiety felt in playing this game that one might not win. This mathematically derived specification of system error in negative form in the Lucky Number game as the unpleasant emotion of $-UV$ anxiety is remarkable evidence for the correctness of this analysis given that human beings do generally sense error as an unpleasant feeling. And $-\varepsilon = -UV$ in Eq28 is also reasonably understood as an error in the player acting to eliminate it by activity directed to get rid of the $-UV$ displeasure, something that people have an instinctive drive to do automatically whenever they feel an emotion they consider unpleasant.

In a thermostatic heating system the temperature error is eliminated by the furnace automatically turning on to heat the room up when the error is present. In the Lucky Numbers game, the player *tries* to eliminate the error by rolling the dice to get a lucky number. The fact that tossing the dice *does not always* obtain the desired set point of getting the V prize is not relevant to the main point that the action or behavior of rolling the dice can be understood as activity done to **eliminate the displeasure in the error** as an automatic emotional operation for human beings.

Note the confluence or equivalence of the system eliminating the error in compliance with the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10. That is, eliminating or negating the $-\varepsilon$ error of Eq28 not only eliminates the displeasure associated with the $-UV$ anxiety but also concomitantly brings about the UV pleasurable thrill of success under uncertainty we saw earlier that arises.

$$(29) \quad T = R - E = V - ZV = (1 - Z)V = UV = -(-UV)$$

This outcome of the UV thrill arising equivalently from the $T = R - E$ Law of Emotion and from the control theory principle of eliminating the error by negation as $-(-UV) = UV$ lends significant credence to both the control theory explanation of emotion and also to the Law of Emotion as a central law of nature, of human nature, obeyed by the human mind.

Note also, from this, the simultaneity of eliminating or negating the $-UV$ displeasure as $-(-UV)$ and of obtaining the UV pleasure of the thrill or excitement of winning as $-(-UV) = UV$. This occurs, this effective equivalence of displeasure eliminated with pleasure gained, in just about all emotional operations.

Next we will see that cybernetic or negative feedback control plays an even broader role in our emotional operations by explaining the cybernetic function of the T transition emotions. Up to this point in our analysis the player's **supposed** sense of the Z probability values in the V prize Lucky Numbers game were taken to be the actual Z probability values of the game as calculated from Elementary Probability Theory. That need not be the case, however, and the case of a mistaken supposition of probability is very instructive in revealing how the different classes of emotions - E expectations, R realizations and T transition emotions - work in their various and different ways.

To wit, a player might have a **supposition** of a probability of success, Z' , of rolling a lucky number that is incorrect in being different from the true Z mathematical probability. In such a case, it is the incorrectly supposed Z' probability held in mind that determines the player's expectation of success in the roll of the dice as $E'=Z'V$. Further, from using such an incorrectly supposed expectation in the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10, developed are similarly "incorrect" T' transition emotions. In the V prize Lucky Numbers game these are a $-Z'V$ valued disappointment upon failure and a $U'V=(1-Z')V$ valued thrill upon success.

We will now show that the function of the T transition emotions is entirely cybernetic or feedback control in nature in its functioning to keep the player's suppositions of probability and of its related expectation or hopes in line with reality and out of error, the error of an incorrect supposition of probability and expectation.

How the mind does this we will illustrate with a player supposing an incorrect value of probability, $Z'=1/2$, of getting the $V=\$120$ Lucky Numbers prize when the actual, mathematically correct, probability is $Z=1/3$. This error between the true $Z=1/3$ probability and the incorrectly supposed $Z'=1/2$ distorts the expectation of the average success occurring in every 1 out of 3 tosses (from the actual $Z=1/3$) to success in 1 out of every 2 tosses. Emotionally it distorts the player's expectation of a size of a win from the the $E=ZV=(1/3)(\$120)=\40 value in Eq5a to

$$(30) \quad E'=Z'V=(1/2)(\$120)=\$60$$

A player under this mistaken $Z'=1/2$ supposition of probability has higher hopes of winning than she should have. Though that most certainly does not affect the on-average outcomes or R realizations of the tosses of the dice, it does affect from the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10 the T transition emotions that arise from the $R=V$ success case and from $R=0$ failure case. And these T' then act, we shall see next, to change and correct subsequent expectations for the player in the game to fit its R realizations. To demonstrate this rather fascinating feedback control error correction operation let's play the standard $Z=1/3$, $V=\$120$ Lucky Numbers game six times as brings about on average a player winning 2 times out of 6 with R realizations, hence, of $(0, 0, 0, 0, \$120, \$120)$, not necessarily in that order. To keep the computations simple we will assume that the player sticks with the incorrect probability of $Z'=1/2$ in his mind through all six games played.

The T' transition emotions felt after the four failed attempts with R as $(0, 0, 0, 0)$ that were preceded by the $E'=\$60$ faulty expectation of Eq30 generate from the Law of Emotion given as $T'=R-E'$ a disappointments of intensity

$$(31) \quad T'=R-E'=0-Z'V= -Z'V= -\$60$$

This $T'= -Z'V= -\$60$ disappointment specifies greater displeasure than the disappointment of $T= -\$40$ of Eq7 that would have been felt if the mathematically correct $Z=1/3$ probability had been supposed. The player experiences this $T'= -Z'V= -\$60$ disappointment for four of the six games of realized outcome $(0, 0, 0, 0, \$120, \$120)$ played, those that result in $R=0$ outcomes. And for the two games out of $(0, 0, 0, 0, \$120, \$120)$ that result in wins as $R=V=\$120$, the excitement of winning with the incorrectly supposed $E'=Z'V=\$60$ expectation of Eq30 is, from the Law of Emotion specified as $T'=R-E'$,

$$(32) \quad T'=R-E'=V-Z'V=\$120-\$60=\$60$$

This is less excitement than the $T=UV=\$80$ of Eq11a the player would have felt had player supposed the correct probability of winning of $Z=1/3$. The player, thus, feels greater disappointment and less thrill over the six games played than she would have felt had she supposed the mathematically correct $Z=1/3$ probability of winning.

Next we want to evaluate the sum of the six T' transition emotions that come about from the six realizations of (0, 0, 0, 0, \$120, \$120). This is 4 times the $T' = -\$60$ disappointment calculated in Eq31 plus 2 times the $T' = \$60$ thrill calculated in Eq32. These emotional outcomes sum to

$$(33) \quad 4(-\$60) + 2(\$60) = -\$120$$

Hence, overall we see a $-\$120$ disappointment emerge emotionally when we assume not unreasonably that the pleasant and unpleasant emotion intensities add linearly and cancel each other out when of equal intensity but opposite polarity. Next note that the **average per game** of these T' transition emotions for the six games played is

$$(34) \quad T'_{AV} = -\$120/6 = -\$20$$

We recognize the $T'_{AV} = -\$20$ average transition emotion from its negative sign as disappointment, a small amount or bit of disappointment. That fits well with how a person feels when their expectations are too high to begin with from incorrect supposition and, hence, can only partly be fulfilled or come to fruition.

Next we want to show that this $T'_{AV} = -\$20$ "bit of disappointment" of Eq34 can also be derived as the **average realization** per game, that is, from true values from outcomes, not suppositions. In our six game set of outcomes of (0, 0, 0, 0, \$120, \$120), two of which are $R = \$120$ payoffs and four of which are $R = 0$ lack of payoffs, the average realization or payoff, R_{AV} , is just the sum of the 6 outcomes divided by 6 or

$$(35) \quad R_{AV} = \$240/6 = \$40$$

Finally now we see that we can calculate the same $T'_{AV} = -\$20$ disappointment of Eq34 from the $T = R - E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10 expressed in terms of the average values as $T'_{AV} = R_{AV} - E'$ with $R_{AV} = \$40$ from Eq35 and $E' = \$60$ from Eq30.

$$(36) \quad T'_{AV} = R_{AV} - E' = \$40 - \$60 = -\$20$$

The above analysis makes it clear that the purpose or function of the T transition emotions in our emotional machinery is to transform the incorrectly supposed

expectation of $E'=\$60$ of Eq30 into the correct $E=\$40$ expectation of Eq5a. This can be understood as coming about from the Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$, expressed as $T'_{AV}=R_{AV} - E'$ and then rearranged and solved for R_{AV} as

$$(37) \quad R_{AV} = E' + T'_{AV}$$

Understand now that because the R_{AV} average realization must be a valid expression of what actually happens on average in actual rolls of the dice, R_{AV} must also be a valid prediction of what will happen on average in the future. That is, R_{AV} must specify the correct expectation of future outcomes. Further from the equivalence of $R_{AV}=\$40$ in Eq35 and $E=\$40$ of Eq5a, which is the correct expectation of $E=ZV$ for the $V=\$120, Z=1/3$ game, we can write

$$(38) \quad R_{AV} = E$$

Then substituting E into Eq37 for R_{AV} obtains

$$(39) \quad E = E' + T'_{AV}$$

We see, then that this transposed form of the Law of Emotion in Eq37 solved for E generates the correct expectation of $E=\$40$, what should have been properly understood and supposed to begin with.

$$(40) \quad E = E' + T'_{AV} = \$60 - \$20 = \$40$$

This tells us that disappointment from failure, in this situation the $T'_{AV} = -\$20$ average disappointment of Eq36, reduces an incorrectly supposed, excessive expectation, here of $E'=\$60$, to generate the correct expectation, here of $E=\$40$. This correction that comes about via the T'_{AV} transition emotion operating on the incorrectly supposed E' initial expectation happens in the human mind in a purely emotional way with no conscious calculating of the intensities of the emotions involved as we did ourselves in the above analysis.

The transition emotion of disappointment just works on your expectations in that way to get them into line with reality in subsequent repeat behaviors of the same kind. The confluence of the above mathematical analysis for that with how the

process works emotionally in a person powerfully reinforces the validity of this control theory explication of our emotions.

The way that the transition emotion of disappointment was seen in the above to affect subsequent expectation through the modified form of the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion as $E = E' + T'_{AV}$ also works for the other transition emotions of excitement, of relief and of dismay.

We will demonstrate that next for the excitement generated by winning under uncertainty for the case of a supposed probability of success being *less* than the actual mathematical probability. Consider specifically a player supposing a $Z'=1/6$ probability of success instead of $Z=1/3$ for the standard $V=\$120$ prize awarding game. Doing that brings about an expectation of $E'=(1/6)(\$120)=\20 instead of the correct $E=\$40$ of Eq5a.

Using Eq37, but with $E'=\$20$ instead of the $E'=\$60$ we used in the prior case and with the same $R_{AV}=\$40$ realization (which is not affected by incorrect E' expectation suppositions), we see that

$$(41) \quad T'_{AV} = R_{AV} - E' = \$40 - \$20 = \$20$$

This tells us that the excitement of winning dominates for the six games played with average outcomes of (0, 0, 0, 0, \$120, \$120). This overall experiencing of a $T'_{AV}=\$20$ thrill of excitement then affects subsequent expectation in a corrective way to generate the proper $E=\$40$ expectation for the $Z=1/3$, $V=\$120$ parameters via Eq39 as

$$(42) \quad E = E' + T'_{AV} = \$20 + \$20 = \$40$$

We see here that the incorrectly supposed $E'=\$20$ expectation is increased by the $T'_{AV}=\$20$ average thrill to generate the correct expectation of $E=\$40$ for subsequent games with the same parameters. Such a feeling of excitement just works automatically on expectation to bring it into line with reality derived from experience.

More evidence of the validity of this mechanism of how the transition emotions affect subsequent expectation can be developed by demonstrating this cognitive

operation for the v penalty Lucky Numbers game for dismay that arises from a loss and for relief that arises from avoidance of a loss. To wit, an excess of dismay in a loss from an underestimated fear of loss increases subsequent fearful expectation of incurring the v penalty; and an excess of relief from an overestimated fear of loss decreases subsequent fear of incurring the v penalty. We leave the simple algebra for these mechanisms to the reader.

Now we want to make it clear that this transition emotion correction of an incorrect supposition of expectation is a cybernetic or negative feedback control process. The ε error at this level of control is the difference between the realistic, correct expectation, E , and the incorrectly supposed expectation, E' .

$$(43) \quad \varepsilon = E - E'$$

From the above analyses it is readily understood that this ε error, $E - E'$, is eliminated once the supposed but incorrect E' expectation is changed by a transition emotion to the correct expectation, $E' = E$.

$$(44) \quad \varepsilon = E - E' = E - E = 0$$

Note that this transition emotion mediated control of one's expectations takes place in a distinctly different way than the cybernetic, control theory, dynamic we first considered in the V prize game where the desired set point or end goal was to obtain the V prize and the ε error was the difference between actually getting the V dollar prize and the $E = ZV$ expectation of getting it that was felt before rolling the dice.

$$(45) \quad \varepsilon = V - ZV$$

Recall that this error can also be expressed in negative terms, which specifies the error as the unpleasant $-UV$ anxiety felt over whether one will win the V prize or not.

$$(46) \quad -\varepsilon = V - ZV = -UV$$

Having distinguished between these two different levels of emotional feedback control, let us now interrelate them to show how together they make for a very

efficient emotional machine for us humans. Specifically the ϵ error in Eq45 is one that is eliminated **with a behavior**, one that transforms an expectation or hope of a V dollar prize, $E=ZV$, to the set point or desired end goal of getting the prize, $R=V$. That behavior is rolling the dice in the standard Lucky Numbers game, three times on average to get that V prize. Generalized for any goal directed behavior that produces a valued outcome, the above cybernetic dynamic makes clear how such behaviors come about through our emotions. In colloquial terms we behave to eliminate an unpleasant $-\epsilon = -UV$ error as realizes a pleasant outcome for us, which is $R=V$ when the prize sought after and obtained is money.

In contrast, the purpose of the elimination of the ϵ system error in Eq44 is to bring an incorrectly supposed expectation, E' , in line with reality as specified by $E=R_{AV}$ of Eq38. Having our emotional machinery determine the correct expectation for a behavior is important because our expectations, as we shall see, centrally affect our choice of which behavior is best to do in terms of yielding the maximum outcome when alternative behaviors are available. That is, if we have to choose between two Lucky Numbers games both of which award a prize of $V=\$120$ and one of them has a $Z=1/3$ probability of success and the other, $Z=1/2$, we choose the latter. But this is the optimal choice only when the Z probabilities supposed are mathematically correct. The T transition control of expectation is an automatic, cybernetic way our brains keep those probabilities correct.

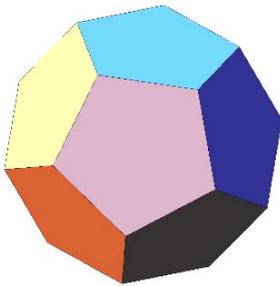
So, one cybernetic process has us act on our emotions to get what has value for us, as V dollars have. And the other cybernetic process insures a supposition of correct expectation to make the best choice of the behavior needed to obtain what is desired when a choice is available. The automaticity of these emotion mediated cybernetic operations should make it clear that decisions made by people do not derive from some undefined nebulous operation called "free will" but from clear laws of nature.

All the biochemical and physiological systems of any living organism including man are controlled ultimately through homeostasis or biological feedback control that operates to retain set point values for the organism that are needed for its survival and reproduction. Our discovery through mathematical analysis that the

emotional processes of man also operate in cybernetic, homeostatic, fashion is exceedingly sensible given that all other major biological systems operate by homeostasis.

It should also be understood that the emotions derived for the ZV expectation of getting a V cash reward as the goal of tossing the dice in the Lucky Numbers game apply generally to any goal directed behavior. And the same for applying the v penalty Lucky Numbers game's emotions to any potentially detrimental situation for which an avoidance behavior can be taken up.

Now as a reward and relief for those who have struggled to do their homework trying to understand the concept of negative feedback control and homeostasis in this section, we will jump to another non-mathematical section - this one by Ruth. It essentially continues the story started in Section 3 to continue to provide realistic data on life to counter the misinformation in fiction and ideology that is pumped into our vulnerable minds 24/7 in the human beehive.



5. Escape from The Garden of Eden



Ed Graf pleading guilty to murdering his stepson's for Insurance money and Ed's cousin, my brother, Don Graf

The prosecution said at his first trial in Waco in 1988 that Ed Graf left work early on Aug. 26, 1986 and picked up his two sons from daycare. He told his wife to stay at work late. He and the kids got home about 4:40 in the afternoon. Ed Graf then rendered the boys' unconscious, dragged them from the house to this small wood shed in the backyard, poured gasoline around near the door, closed the door, locked it and went back to the house. By 4:55 p.m., flames engulfed the shed and burned it to almost nothing in minutes. One of the most damning pieces of evidence in the case that found him guilty and had him serve 25 years in prison before he was granted a retrial in 2014 was the fact that Ed had taken out insurance policies on the eight and nine-year-old boys about a month before the fire.

Bail was set for his retrial at a million dollars. But Ed's brother, Craig, was only able to raise \$100,000 so Ed remained in jail during the retrial. It was nearing its end when I first came across the story of how my cousin had burned his kids alive. I was in shock because though I'm Ed's cousin too and was close enough to the family in my younger days to be his brother, Craig's, baptismal sponsor, the first I heard of the murders was when I came across the story entirely by chance while browsing the Internet during Ed's retrial in 2014. I was in the dark about the killings for the last thirty years because I was the one lucky Graf who escaped from this fundamentalist clan as a young woman, never to be told by anybody in my estranged family about this hideous skeleton in the closet that makes an evidenced case of why I ran away from them all those years ago.

Toward the end of Ed's retrial, with the jury polled to be leaning in favor of conviction, 10-2, which would have locked him up for life with no chance of parole, he suddenly pleaded guilty to the murders as part of a most unusual last minute plea bargain that released him on parole a few days later. A letter to the editor that appeared on the front page of the Waco Tribune shortly after makes clear the outrage caused by his being freed. It read in part: "I would venture to say in the opinion of 99.9 percent of the public who have followed the Edward Graf murder retrial, the handling of this case, including its outcome, is a travesty of the judicial system. It is an enormous injustice to those two boys' lives that he took and to the family of those two boys who have had to relive their nightmare not once but twice. And now this man, if you want to call him that, is going to be able to walk the streets of society again."

I'll speak to these twin evils of Ed's child murders and the judicial corruption that released him from my own experience as a former member of the Graf extended family. I was the one who rebelled against its control and abuse and threw the pain of my suffering back in the face of those who caused it while Ed absorbed the worst of it without resistance and passed his lunatic unhappiness from his upbringing onto the two youngsters he burned alive. This release of unhappiness as violence on innocent victims who weren't its cause is utterly common from the petty meanness people daily endure from those who have some power over them to the mass murders so familiar in the news to the butchery of war, the grand release of one nation's unhappiness from the control imposed on its people on another. And that will reach its maximum horror in the mega-death of nuclear conflict. This true view of adult life as highly controlled ultimately by those at the top of the social hierarchy for their benefit runs counter to the American Dream picture presented to young people in ruling class controlled media.

To expose the reality of life, one calls on the one picture of it that one is sure of, the reality of one's own life. Nothing, though, is as difficult as revealing the truth about, especially the bad things that happened to you. For whatever feels bad inside when you think about it brings greater humiliation yet in the public confessing of it. But the cost of keeping private matters hidden from others is also great if making life clear is important to you, for only the raw truth spat out is able to show that the society we live in has problems, significant institutional problems that must be spelled out clearly if there is to be any chance of doing anything about them. And after I finish my story I'll talk about the important issues in precise mathematical language.

I was born four months before America entered World War Two as part of the last wave of women whom fundamentalist tradition was set up to control them as tightly and painfully as the foot bound women of imperial China. My father was a minister in rural parishes in Cullman, Alabama, where I was born, and later in Serbin, Texas, north of Austin, where his superior ability to extort tithes from parishioners elevated him to a position at Lutheran seminary where he taught Stewardship, a fancy name for extracting cash from the congregation.

My mother was a shrewd bulldog faced woman right out of Stephen King's, *Carrie*, crazy enough to think and tell us kids that Jesus talked to her every day and that the fossils in Dinosaur National Monument were plaster fakes secretly buried in the ground by people who hated God. This gave her cover for raising her children with the switch, including this little girl, me, with near weekly humiliating and painful britches pulled down whippings. If she didn't get off sexually with this game, for she had a way of twisting truth in all matters, I wouldn't believe it. Mildred Graf was 50 Shades of Grey with a halo.

Fear ruled my life, fear of punishment for taking a cookie without permission, fear of my mother whenever I approached my house coming home from school, fear of the dark, fear of dogs and a fear of the moon at night that stretched into my early thirties, at which time I was miraculously able to escape from this idiotic pointless terror of disobeying and everything else conditioned in me by childhood brutality disguised and blessed by my minister father as a proper Christian upbringing.

Some of the worst of my early years was my role as ego fodder for my brother, Don, older than me by two years. He was the recipient of the same sort of corporal punishment I got until he firmed into the role of my mother's toad and henchman over me. My hearing her spank Don used to bring on tears in me for him, but a waste of emotional energy in that my mother's iron rule could never be softened with tears and in Don's passing on a good amount of the pain he got from her to his younger sister, me. If my recall of his punching me in the shoulder at least once a day is an exaggerated memory, it is not by much. And once you are scared of somebody physically, even suggestions to stupid things potentially frightening become effective like being told there was a wolf upstairs in my bedroom that brought on a kind of terror I showed outwardly that he delighted in.

I was lucky, though. I was not so destroyed as to be unable to hate my mother, for she and my minister father left enough in dumbbell me by pampering on the margins to make me a pretty if frightfully awkward girl child, for the minister's daughter is a public figure and if thought pretty by the congregation, a valuable

status symbol helpful for stewardship and for the minister's promotion in the pastoral ranks.

Alone in a piously brutal regime, all that mattered to me growing up was the thought and hope of love and rescue. The most daring books in our home library in those days were the Zane Grey novels. My imagination translated the cowboy heroes in them into would-be lovers scooping me up on their horses and taking me far away from my family. Beyond this seeping in of this instinctive feeling under the repression, my attitude towards men was also shaped by my father, a classic ever smiling father knows best type minister who is both an extreme asshole and an extreme bastard underneath the smile. And also by my brother, Don, who sustained his imperious position over me with constant disdain and disapproval even as I grew beyond the punch in the arm years. I was the model he practiced on in learning to control and humiliate people successfully as a lawyer in later life.

My early romances once I reached adolescence were the typical failures of young Christian girls. The boy I came to love most, the one who loved me the most, my parents hated and never stopped talking him down. Unfortunately, the poor fellow, only seventeen like me, lacked the vigor and toughness of a Zane Grey hero even if his fondling was enough to kindle a strong flame of desire and affection in me for him. It takes more weapons and courage to be the knight in shining armor that rescues a damsel as much in distress as I was than any 17-year-old boy could possibly have mustered. My tears from the inevitable breakup were doubly painful with my mother reveling in soothing me over what I took emotionally to be a personal failure and shortcoming on top of the loss of love.

I remember the humiliation of being seventeen and dragged along by my parents on Sunday family trips devoid of any male attention or admiration. It was on one of these family jaunts to Wichita Falls in Texas that I first have a memory of Edward E. Graf Jr. This photo of his parents suggest a childhood for Ed Jr. little different than mine if the ugliness of parents is any indication of the way they treat their offspring as it was with my also strikingly ugly mother and father.



My Uncle Ed and Aunt Sue, the Killer's Parents

That Sunday visit, Ed Jr. was six-years-old, eleven years my junior. My memory of him back then was that he was puny, though glossed with a reputation for being smart, perhaps what you might expect for a first born boy raised in a corporal punishment believing family. I don't want to make too strong a comparison to my brother, Don, as a way of cutely suggesting that Don would have burned children to death for insurance money, but in fact he was also puny as a young man, my corporal punishing mother constantly haranguing him to "walk with your shoulders back" and glossing him as a very smart boy. They were both standard middle class momma's boys. As were Ed and Sue and my parents, in personality and looks, your standard fundamentalist ugly looking piously mean parents.

A few years later, shortly after I got married, I ran into Ed Jr. again after we went back to Wichita Falls for a visit with Aunt Sue and Uncle Ed right after Don's wedding down in Galveston. I remember Ed Jr. more critically then when he was about ten as being awkward to the point of what southern girls called back then,

punky, and his mother, Sue, as your typically unattractive Christian mother who talked to Ed Jr. like some school teachers do to their students, in a continuously controlling tone. He definitely did not strike me as a future murderer at that time, but you learn as you age in these circles that whatever sinfulness may reside in a fundamentalist person, there was no hint of killer in Ed because fundamentalist conservatives never show their true feelings. Indeed, one piece of advice my fundamentalist mother gave me, likely a commonplace tip in Missouri Synod Lutheran families, was “never say what you think.”

But killer aside, what you do see here is the makings of an injured soul of a little boy who is over-dominated by his less than empathetic mother. Two decades later I ran into him again a few years just before he killed his stepsons and then the results of his less than perfect childhood began to show an adult level pathology. But that is getting way ahead in my story.

The fellow my wounded heart connected with in marriage, or better, was connected to me by my parents, was a seminary student in my father's class at Concordia Theological Seminary in Springfield, Illinois. What I soon found out about him, that he was a toady type who filtered all his thoughts before he spoke them, I had absolutely no way of appreciating when I met him, for my father, like ministers generally, behaved this way as an integral part of being a minister, a job that is 95% acting. After two years of college at age twenty I married this Len Schoppa, a classic phony as all ministers have to be in order to do their ridiculous job of convincing people that the most important thing in their life is a spirit being that you can't ever see. The error in marrying him was inadvertently forewarned by my brother Don's not bothering to attend my wedding, whether he really did need to study for an important law school exam or from the utter disdain he had for me on this supposed most important day in a woman's life. It was a fairy tale omen of worse things to come with Len and, indeed, with my brother Don, too,

To speak of myself as gullible as Len and I headed off two years later to Japan as Lutheran missionaries is as much an understatement as calling a blind person gullible. I came equipped for my role as wife only with a thoroughly ingrained sense of duties to be performed, cook and wash the dishes and prepare the

Sunday communion wafers and such, along with a few primitive feelings that escaped my mother's guillotine like my continued strong longing for love not satisfied in this very emotionally empty Christian marriage. Further, the usually subtle misery of this loveless, effectively arranged marriage manifested itself in the less than subtle daily migraine headaches I'd had since early grade school that worsened as the anniversaries piled up.

Can I make a light joke of the preposterousness of the goal of converting the Japanese to Christianity? For my minister husband it was all dominance games aimed mostly at the young Japanese guys who came to our mission church in search of escape from the empty life that awaited that generation of losers to America in World War II. For me it was being unwittingly being used as the pretty young wife of the missionary pastor, my vacant, submissive personality a fine fit to docility expected of Japanese women. I was a very efficient window dressing for his game. Many young men fell in love with me in this part I blindly played like Elizabeth Taylor in *Suddenly Last Summer* with Len beating the boys into subordination to him as the guy who had the woman they were all falling in love with. And down they went to him, all these poor bastards, one of them committing suicide as a result of this love triangle game Len played that I was completely unaware of. This story you won't find in the Bible or preached about on televangelist TV.

I hesitate to say anything about my relationship to the three kids I bore for this haloed predator, they being the only love this inadequate mother ever had in her life. If they got anything good it was because they were everything in my life, but my failure was so clearly revealed in the end by the lack of any sparkle in their eyes as they approached adolescence. That makes you wish you were dead if you're unable to rationalize such things, as I was not. For as bad as what is done to you in life and what you become as a result of it, worse is what you pass on to others, intended or not, especially to the innocents. On the other hand, my leaving Len in a dramatic way (as I'll get into in a moment) smack in the middle of the kids' pre-adolescence turned out to be an intended amelioration of the worst of me that I have always been grateful for in retrospect. They all turned out to be rather good looking creatures in their adult lives.

As a pastor's wife in mildly idiot type rather like Sandy Dennis in *Whose Afraid of Virginia Wolf* I would have been totally devoured by the older women in any American congregation. But in Japan I was protected from the lady's groups by my semi-worship by a vast gaggle of Japanese men that extended out beyond our mission church boys to the classes of college age guys I taught English to at Hokkaido University. This support that nature gives free of charge to girls who manage, by care or luck, to keep their waist slim was raised to a better level when fate, most miraculously, handed me a side role in life as a commercial model on Japanese TV. One of our social contacts through the mission church was a television producer who signed me on to pitch canned bean soup on Japanese television, the equivalent of Campbell's soups. For six years I was known all over Japan in this guise, stopped by strangers on the street and at restaurants when I dined out and asked, "Aren't you the Koiten Soup Girl?!!!"

A sort of Zane Grey hero soon came into my life in the form of a Japanese college boy, a ski bum sort of fellow who took the missionary's wife bait that the Reverend Schoppa dangled in front of all the young men, too her off to bed. This happened on church sponsored ski trips up on the slopes of Hokkaido that Len didn't come to because he didn't ski. It was real love as close as I'd ever been to it. He liked me a lot and I loved him for him for loving me that much and loved him too. The affair, whenever I could get it, was a great relief from the empty life I'd had with my mom and dad appointed missionary husband. Physical love that works for a woman in her twenties is fairly close to Heaven when you're in the middle of it as much as not having it is quite hell.

Perhaps affairs like this are easy to hide for the smart women on the *Real Housewives of New Jersey* TV shows, but in a crowd of 30 fellow LCMS missionary couples we were but one of, some of whom also went on these Christian Fellowship ski trips, once the slightest suspicion arose about Mrs. Schoppa and her ski partner, the gossip fell like rain from the sky on the doorstep of the Rev. Schoppa. The climax of the confrontation between him and I was funny in its surprising twists and turns only in distant recollection of it.

I didn't hesitate to confess once he accused. I was much too dumb to tell a good lie and, to tell the truth, I had no good reason for wanting to hide it from him for by this time, I hated him for plaguing my life with his presence and instinctive female intuition must have primed me to unload with the truth with both barrels once he popped the question. What surprised me was his falling smack on the floor when I told him, yes, yes, I did it, and then writhing on the rug like a big piece of bacon frying in a pan turned up high; and while twisting all about like that confessing in a series of blurts to having had sex with farm animals, sheep, pigs and even the large dog his parents named, "Lassie." Even at this, though, I was sure later that he was lying, for he was the quintessential toady type who had to lie about everything in his toady life. What his preferring to fuck geese better than me had to do with my having had an affair the last six months with one of our converts did not, could not, register in my head at the moment of his deep confession and only in retrospect a few days later did I realize that the rumor that he had had sex with his retarded cousin, Larry, that a few of the good old boys in Harrold, Texas, had lightly joked about must have been true.

Once you have a sense of that, parallax with pastor personalities generally so similar to his and my father's makes it clear that they're all closet fags of one kind or another. Sense would tell you that the Protestant Christian clerics couldn't be that much different than the Catholic Christian clerics, however seldom you see one get his trousers pulled down in public like Ted Haggard and Jim Bakker. It quite fit my own father, who though he likely sinned only in his heart in this regard I would guess, had to be perverse sexually in marrying anyone as bearishly ugly as my mother. Indeed, the truest truth ever spoken on TV had to be about queer conservatives as the norm by Joel McHale at the 2014 White House Correspondent's Dinner. I mean, the brief titter and then drop dead silence tells it all. I mean, who looks prissier and weirder and queerer than pretty boys Ted Cruz and Marco Rubio and slippery ugly boys Rush Limbaugh and Karl Rove.

And back closer to home, it would take a very kind woman not to see my brother, Don, quintessentially conservative in his outward religious and political behavior, as the queer that his later behavior in life showed him to be, a closet queer like Ted Haggard and one with a lot of social standing and power, the worst kind.

That's not to say that he never married, did two or three times. But on the other hand all divorced him. And a wealthy lawyer has to be a pretty much a good deal off the norm to be left behind by women when he's got that much status and that much money in the bank, and by a bunch of women no less. That's a bit of a tip off on what my faggot brother does on his frequent weekend trips out of town.

Anyway, angry gossip aside and back to the main story, the headline of Missionary's Wife Has Affair with College Boy Convert in Japan quickly spread beyond our Lutheran missionary circle in Japan to all the Christian missionaries in Japan and shortly, in less than a year, all but one of our 30 LCMS (Lutheran Church Missouri Synod) missionary couples were recalled back to America. Sounds like a very funny movie, but that actually did happen, I'm proud to say. The scandal hit home state-side, too, for my father was way up there in the LCMS church hierarchy and seeking just at this inopportune time to be elected Bishop of the Texas District of our church. Indeed, he lost not long after Len and I crawled home. You also have to understand that the Graf clan's primary occupations were in the church as ministers or teachers in LCMS parochial schools. So I was not exactly welcomed back with smiles and flowers. So, I mean that as, as a result of this, the word was put out by my immediate family who were all, including my brother Don, directly affected by the scandal, that I was mentally ill. For why else would a girl from such a good Christian family do something so horribly sinful and to such a wonderful fellow minister (and son-in-law) as Len, as seeking another man's carnal companionship.

Mentally ill, though, was not how I began feeling shortly after the plane touched down in Dallas. Scared rather to see my family siding with the now villainous poisonous snake of a husband I had that I was longing to make my ex-snake. They all became snakes at this point, and snakes with a mind to bite down hard on me as punishment for my sin and to get me back with Len, the thought of whom at this point, animal-fucker and so on, made me feel like vomiting any time I came into visual contact with him. Ted Haggard's wife remained "loyal" to her homosexual fundamentalist minister husband after his Tuesday night affairs with the muscular ass fucking prostitute was made public by the latter, but she knew what she and he was getting into to begin with and hung around wither fake

brave smile as a heavily invested business partner. That kind is her own kind of Christian perversity that God fortunately did not curse me with too.

Ah, the silver lining to the story I will now backtrack to. It came in the form of a Japanese baby girl Len and I adopted at Len's insistence to make us look like the spitting image of Holy Family to the Japanese around us. Ba-chan, the nickname I gave her shortly after I fell in love with this most darling baby child, was the product of a young, very pretty prostitute from Yokohama, whom I met before she gave the baby up, and of her Norwegian seaman lover, so she said. Ba-chan was strikingly adorable with her unusual mix of Asiatic and Nordic features.

Ba-chan was special also in my being able to love her as other than a co-offspring of the snake. My ski fellow lover was also in love with her, always brought her on the ski trips, so she also provided bonding in that way. And Ba-chan also provided a splendid excuse for my avoiding Len at night for the last three years of the marriage by needing to sleep on the couch near Ba-chan to keep her from crying. This avoided his touch, a special dispensation for me under the circumstances and one packed with plausible deniability for my loathing of him, a face saver for him. I loved her in a special way that had no poison in it.

Anyway, whatever hell was there for me back in the States if I didn't go back with Len to please my father and the hundred ministers pressuring me to do so, it was impossible to do that, on par with my being forced to amputate one of my fingers with a kitchen knife. So I ran away in my mind even if not in physical reality. But a lot of good that did as they all ran after me, calling me on the phone incessantly with preachments and ringing the doorbell to talk Jesus and God's love to me. Actually, I was going mad because I couldn't leave the kids behind, I knew that, and the whole deal just frightened the hell out of me. The most I could do was spend a few hours a day curled up in a ball fantasizing impossible Zane Gray level solutions to this impossible problem. I even thought some about my boyfriend back in Japan at times, who wrote to beg me to come back to Japan. But he was no Zane Grey hero because he was just a college kid who lacked the high caliber punch this quite dangerous situation I was in required. Len pushed and pushed for reconciliation to save his reputation and as he did it got brutal, emotionally

and at times, physically, for there was none of this rape or violence on a wife stuff for a husband back in those days.

Oddly, as luck would have it or I wouldn't be writing this, my fantasies did come true. This was in the guise of a fellow appearing on the scene just in the nick of time. I had insisted to Len upon our being booted out of Japan that we go to Berkeley where I'd read in an issue of International Time Magazine that things were happening, new things that gave hope in a general way, just what I needed in my personal life at that time of despair. I insisted we go to Berkeley.

Len enrolled at this school, a Presbyterian seminary just north of San Francisco, to get a Master's Degree in something called pastoral counseling so he could become a marriage counselor or drug counselor, his sense of being a minister having taken a good beating. We got set up in an apartment in student housing at this seminary in San Anselmo in Marin County barely speaking to each other.

It was like being locked up in a cage. I avoided the other minister's wives, all sweetly phony kinds I couldn't stand beyond my situation with Len that was not the norm on campus. This was not at all what I had come to the Bay Area hoping for. So a great relief it was to go 40 miles away to a youth hostel at Point Reyes National Seashore for a weekend of environmental education with my oldest boy's seventh grade class. It was an especially great relief because I was due on that Monday following the weekend to go with Len to see two psychiatrists who were teachers of his as some sort of marriage therapy he said he had set up to patch us back together again. Like a doll with a broken arm stuffed with sawdust in the head I agreed to this, perhaps as evidence of just how stupid I was. For Len had already dragged me to one marriage counselor back in Japan and the eighth grade suggestions made by this toad who was almost as low as Len could have only worked if the wife wanted to stay with a husband for material reasons despite despising him.

The collection of people who were out at this youth hostel included not only all the other kids in my son, Lenny's, classroom and some of their parents but also what you'd have to call genuine users of a youth hostel just north of San Francisco in the early 70s, many of them guys with long hair and girls with torn jeans and

actual flowers in their hair, the kind that favored organically produced cheese. They were mostly a sweet kind of looking people, not that strong, but all trying to be, all except for one who wasn't particularly sweet looking.

Pete was coming from New York, a dropout from graduate school at Rensselaer Polytechnic, one credit shy of a PhD in biophysics. And he was different than the others in being very tough looking, more what you'd think a Hell's Angel would look like than scientist. It was easy to see that he was not afraid of anybody or possibly anything. Later he would tell me that a dream he had while sleeping in a campground in Spain across from the coast of Africa got him to prefer death, actually, to losing his freedom. Of the many creatures who inhabited the interesting world of the late sixties in America, a lot of them following the style of the day, he was very, very real, a real give me liberty or give me death character.

Later he would also tell me that on first seeing me that he thought I looked like a model in a Woman's Day magazine, which wasn't far from the truth as I had been a TV model in Japan. We talked for six hours that evening I first met him, his eyes that rather glowed never leaving mine. He said the self-help psychology book I had brought with me was nonsense, that they all were all nonsense, and that the true cause of unhappiness was abuse and the cure for it, rebellion against abusive people and situations, period. He couldn't have found a more receptive audience for his politics, for without knowing my situation, he spelled it out for me perfectly. When I told him about my husband as the night went on and my being about to go to a therapy session with Len's two psychiatrist professors, he said not to go. "I wouldn't trust the bastard. It's possibly a trap. Two psychiatrists can commit a person involuntarily. Don't go." He was smart, tough and careful.

The next morning at breakfast in the communal kitchen of the youth hostel, he got to talking with two Australian fellows in my presence who were arguing that you had to compromise in life to survive and that anybody who didn't was a fool. Pete not liking the implication and likely especially not in front of me, retorted that he thought it cowardly if you compromised with people who were abusive or insulting towards you, which could have included the two of them at this moment. Both of these Australians were big guys. But when it became clear that

their differences were irreconcilable and the remarks going back and forth picked up steam, Pete just raised his eyebrows and lowered his tone and stopped smiling and they both more or less ran out of the kitchen. He was not somebody who made you afraid of him, never me, but it was also clear that he would not back down in a fight, not even against two, not unlike my heroes in the Zane Grey novels.

We separated during a group tour of the seashore later that afternoon and when we met again I opened up to him. When he asked why I seemed so sad, I said, "Look at my son, look at his eyes." To me, anyone could tell that Lenny Jr. hadn't turned out as well as he might have. And that killed me, for I did love the boy. Pete talked to reassure me, saying that Lenny didn't look that bad, "looks better than a lot of other kids his age." He meant it, too, you could tell, and that made me feel better. Our conversations went on and on that night too, Saturday night, touching a lot on politics for Pete was heavily into the idea of actual revolution for he said that the hierarchy you had to submit to in order to survive was deadly to self-respect and with that lost, you might as well be dead.

We parents and our kids were all due to leave the next morning on Sunday. At some point during our last exchange before I left, he touched my upper arm in a firm way as I was about to go, something I could feel down to my knees. As my son and I were about to get into our blue Toyota, I suddenly turned and asked him on impulse, stupidly in retrospect, if he wanted to come over to the house and have dinner with the family. Given my situation with Len, I don't know why those words came out of my mouth. I suppose I wanted to see him again, but didn't know how to say it in a socially acceptable way.

He smiled and shook his head and said, "Three doesn't work." And we parted. That night after Lenny and I got back home I told Len I wasn't going to the therapy session he'd set up. And the next morning after Len went off to class for the day I called the youth hostel and told Pete I wanted to make the 40 mile drive back to see him and talk some more.

He was very forward when I got there, though it quickly became obvious that it was because he so attracted to me. I stayed overnight and by the time morning came and I knew I had to get back to the kids, Pete was telling me that he had never seen a girl as beautiful as I looked that morning, not in a movie, not in a magazine, not in real life, not ever. As I've been with him 43 years now, I know he meant it at that moment, though some credit to him because all that physical attention does make a girl feel and look really good. He also said the morning after that first intimate night, "I'd die for you. I'd kill for you." As such, given my circumstances, he was just what I needed, as things turned out.

Whatever the nonsense in pop psych books about guys "needing to make a commitment", Darwin says it all much better than Freud or the Pope. When the sex clicks, you just are committed. And when it doesn't, there's no future in the relationship. Either the guy's got the testosterone and heart capable of love required or he doesn't. There's little love in America today, it's all breakups and divorce and loneliness, even in marriages that hold together for money sake, because all the guys but the bravest ones who resist critical compromise, have been gelded, castrated, made cute little boys out of at best and those worth little in the long run.

What was truly amazing and unarguable as to the power of love was that starting after that morning up at the youth hostel, my migraine headaches went away. I don't mean that they were less painful, but that they just completely went away, never to come back again for the rest of my life. That's physical proof of the power of love. It also tells you something about where migraines come from. And it tells you one way to get rid of them, though it's obviously not something you can buy over the counter or get a prescription for.

Len knew what was up the minute I got back home late that morning. "I can tell by your eyes," he said, but better he could tell by the fact that I had been out all night. Pete said to tell him the minute I got back home to get out of the house. I did. He refused at first until I told him angrily that I'd run screaming out onto the seminary campus if he didn't. It helps to be furious at critical moments. He left.

The pious fraud I'd had the misfortune to live with for the previous ten years came back the next day, though, and tried to rape me. I ran from the apartment with bruises on my shoulders and arms. Len went out the door and took the car keys with him. Pete was furious when he heard about what he'd done when I hitchhiked out to the youth hostel the following day. "I'll kill the bastard," he made clear.

He didn't have to wait long to have the opportunity. Len drove out to the youth hostel to ask questions and confront him a couple of days later. Pete's best war story was how he backed down a gang of ten Puerto Ricans on East 11th St. in Manhattan where he lived by beating the leader of the gang in front of them. This was just before he came to California and met me. By the time he left New York City he had picked up a couple of knife scars and four bullet holes and had never backed down in a fight even when confronted with the gun.

He's told me the story of the fight with Len that day often over the years and without going into all the words said between them and the punches thrown, Pete in the end got Len down in a position where he could have ripped Len's eyes out and felt angry enough to do it but didn't because he knew that would go over the line and surely get him locked up. He didn't have to do anything that hash, though, because whatever the details of their fight, Len got the point and was scared enough of Pete after that to never come over and bother me again.

But that was hardly the end of the pain Len could cause. Immediately after my filing for divorce a few days later, Len got visitation rights and it was impossible not to see how he loved coming over to take a bite out of me with the courts backing him up, something 50 million women in America in the same situation have to have experienced. It was so obvious in my case because Len never cared anything about the kids any more than he did about me - until I filed for divorce. Before that we were little more than window dressing for the creep. Now he was their loving father doing more with them in the next couple of months than he'd done in the previous ten years. I should make it clear that through all this, Len wanted me back, both to please my parents and to not look like the biggest loser in the world to everybody else as the minister whose wife ran off and left him. So

endless intrusions in every way he was licensed by the law to make them through the kids. Even Pete had to swallow his urge to crack Len's skull when he came round, which caused him noticeable if not unbearable discomfort when Len came for the kids every other weekend.

All of these maneuvers by Len during the divorce were calculated to get me back, not to produce a livable divorce. Len made no bones about it. Neither did my parents or my brother, Don, who called from Texas and talked to me endlessly like I was a disobedient eight-year-old. As this phase dragged on it became clear that much of Len's legal strategizing was engineered by Don. Pete and I felt sure of this because Len's actual lawyer in California was a cheapo prematurely balding grease head who mostly wanted me to like him when we had contact and who seemed half in the dark about the maneuvers Len was making on his own.

Like I said a good part of the endless harassment to get me to leave the evil Rabbi and go back to worthy Len was near daily phone calls and house calls from a dozen or so Lutheran ministers in the area. I felt a jolt every time I heard the front door bell ring. One ring, though, produced not a dark robed minister but my mother in an unannounced fly up from Texas. She brought along a large roast beef. Fortunately, Pete happened to be right there in the living room two feet from the front door when the bell rang.

The interaction between the three of us was relatively brief and to the point. My mother, whom Pete once described as looking remarkably like the "basilisk", a mythical lizard-like monster, threatened us both with punishment from God and told Pete more than a few times the hour she was there what she had told me when I was young, that Jesus spoke to her directly on a daily basis. What Pete suggested God could do, shouted back in her face, is exactly what you might imagine a politically radical, physically confident lover fed up with the crap that had been rained down on me since the day I filed the divorce would say, namely that God and she could both go fuck themselves and for her to get the hell out of the house. When she hesitated, Pete more or less pushed her out the front door and to make his point even more emphatically, he tossed her roast beef in the garbage can sitting on the porch next to the front door.

"Seemed to me more like a squabble with a dyke over their mutual girlfriend," he said the minute she cleared the driveway with her luggage in her hand. "Your mother really is weird. No wonder you hated her so much when you were young." My memory of some of her more invasive, hygienic sort of, punishments my mother abused me with made that picture of her a fairly accurate one. She was disgusting on top of being cruel and overbearing.

I'm positive, though I don't know how I'd go about proving it, that maternal rape of children has to be common and the most hidden crime. I'm sure even though I don't know how to prove it that Adam Lanza's mother screwed his ass into the painful hell his life became because of her that drove him to take all those kids there to hell with him as some twisted revenge on his pious fraud mother. Forget the happy kids' faces on the cereal commercials on TV. Go take a look at real kids in real daycare facilities and in real schools in America and be shocked at the obvious unhappiness and fear that sits on their obedient faces.

One thing for sure is that Columbine and the Virginia Tech and Newtown mass murders were all perpetrated by unhappy kids. And it's hard to dismiss the fact that a lot of the unhappiness in unhappy kids has to come from the mothers, whether from their predation or neglect. I am sure fathers too, but whatever the psychobabble nonsense of parental equality drummed up by the propaganda chorus to insure that capitalism has a willing female labor force, bad mothering in an especially big way is the problem because we women are what we are as mothers in a very basic instinctively way whatever the myth. Pity the children.

When my mother saw how forceful Pete was during that brief time and got a quick but telling picture of how much my kids liked and respected him, she and Len and Don changed strategy with respect to custody of the kids. First Len said that, of course, I'd get the kids, the strategy in that being that he'd get to keep his feet in the game with every visitation and that eventually the kids would influence me to go back to being Mrs. Ruth Schoppa. But after my mother's visit, the legal papers changed abruptly to Len asking for custody of our three biological kids, this to take the kids away from me and break my heart, which it did, as a means to get me back with Len so I could be back with them. With both sets of their

grandparents on Len's side, the kids' tone quickly became, "We're going with daddy; and you should come back with him, too." Nothing more to be said.

This thing of losing custody of your children is portrayed if at all in the media as something as casual as going for an annual check-up at the doctor, no big deal. But it's damn not like that at all. It killed me. Almost. At that point nearly turning me into the crazy person they said I was because of the kids deciding under the influence of all the "good" adults in the game to leave me. Still I refused to go back to him and reunite with this bunch of bastards. That wasn't going to work, fuck you all and your horrible games, I thought.

In the end in tough times your heart weighs all the options and tells you what to do. As pained as I was about the kids, I never once had the slightest impulse to go back to the Graf clan. Soon after the kids went off with Len and out of the house, Pete and I bought an \$800 trailer to live in with three-year-old Ba-chan whom I still had custody of. They left her behind, not fighting for custody, to keep up Len's connection to me, for the theme was relentlessly, come back, Ruth, come back.

Len still had legal visitation rights with little Ba every other weekend. After the other kids left, his comings and goings to get her were very difficult. Almost too sad to talk about was the third or fourth one of these weekend visitations. When he brought Ba-chan back this time, something was missing. She wouldn't speak. She was completely unresponsive. Wouldn't talk, wouldn't smile, wouldn't do anything but crawl around on the floor after a while making sounds like a kitty cat. Whatever had been my baby Ba seemed dead, just not there anymore and replaced with something truly out of a horror story, but one you're a part of instead of one you're reading.

After a half an hour of this nightmare scene in the living room of the trailer, I called Len on the phone and screamed out, "What did you do to her!?" Only to hear him immediately reply in a clearly faked, contrived manner, "What did **you** do to her?" This doubled the scariness of what had happened by making it clear that something had been done by them that they were aware of, for his tone was not at all terrified for what might have happened to her, but accusatory towards me. Whatever they had done to produce this horror, they wanted to use it on me,

on us, to destroy me and us by destroying the baby while blaming it on us, which made it clear that they had intentionally done something to destroy this poor little three-year-old.

What did we do? We ran the next day, terrified. Pete remarked that he was usually prepared for anything, but not this. That while he despised Len, he found it impossible to believe that anybody could do something this horrible. We just picked up stakes and hitched the trailer to the pick-up truck and drove away, up the highway not sure where we were going, but to someplace unknown to them, just out of there where Len knew our location. Screw the legality of it, rather be locked up for violating court ordered visitation than ever let him get his hands on her again, we quickly agreed without debate.

Soon we crossed from California into Oregon. Leaving the state upping the potential charges for violating visitation to the felony level. We didn't care. Threatening letters from Len and his lawyer and the authorities came to the Post Office Box we kept on the California side of the border. We didn't care. We worried constantly that they'd track us down, every sight of a car in Oregon with California or Texas plates producing a feeling of sharp fear and violent anger. Pete said if he ever came across Len after what had happened, he'd literally kill him. And he would have. I was so sad and crazy after that I don't know how we made it through the days. Pete never quit. All the love available between the three of us went to Ba-chan after that. We spoiled her with anything and everything she wanted just to get her to keep her smile. And that worked. We became like her slaves, tiring and often humiliating for she developed a bit of a mean streak like you might think a frightened individual might do if it had power over you. But this kind of treatment kept her looking beautiful, no matter the cost in time and energy and however much it made her one very self-interested child.

Pete never quit. I was half crazy over the loss of the three kids and what they'd done to Ba-chan and she was a load to handle every minute she was awake. He was a real fighter, to the death against the viciousness of life under the control of those who had the power. I should talk about that to make it clear why he had this extremely dedicated disposition that is so rare in this post 9/11 era. When

Pete was in graduate school, his thesis advisor, a fellow high up in science by the name of Dr. Posner, stole his research, publishing what Pete had done on his own without Pete's name on it. Pete said at first he couldn't believe it. Then Posner told Pete that he wouldn't sign his thesis to get him his PhD degree unless Pete kissed his ass, figuratively, of course, but in such a blatant way that it was almost a literal demand. In a way this was just part of who Posner was, for he had a reputation, Pete found out after the fact, of being the worst kind of bastard, an academic manipulator supreme. But also his mega-extreme treatment of Pete was in no small way because Pete was and very much looked like a 60s rebel, anti-Vietnam war radical, long hair, anti-authoritarian attitude and the rest.

Posner's game was pure power play, teaching Pete who was the boss, a kind of rape of a young man that's not that uncommon in the academic community if you read the last chapters of the book by Desmond Morris, *The Human Zoo*. So what did Pete do in response to all this? He told Posner along with the rest of his thesis committee, some in on the gang rape, others too cowardly to challenge big science Posner, to go fuck themselves. All five of them were sent telegrams in high style telling them this.

And from that experience of resisting abusive authority, he said he experienced a genuine miracle, an unexpected major uptick in his life, reborn with a new level of confidence in his heart. He joked that his sex life, which wasn't the worst even before this, (he lived with a lingerie model his junior and senior year in college) took off to new heights where women started near fighting to see who could sit on his lap in the watering holes on 1st Avenue in Manhattan. And on his way from New York to California shortly before we met, he'd had sex with three different girls on the Greyhound bus ride cross country. He said it was a new life impossible to turn back from even though he gave up his PhD as the price paid to get it. And he got that back, too, ten years later when his biophysical research on bone growth was validated by a research team in Czechoslovakia who gave him credit for the discovery.

Anyway, he was a fighter in all things he believed in and that led to his fighting every day to bring Ba-chan back to life, always propping me up and telling me to

never lose hope. This was a hard task because Ba-chan hardly ever spoke a word over the next three years. But what she did do was draw all the time. She was a precociously gifted artist almost as a compensation for her not communicating by talking. And when she was about six years old, she started drawing cartoon frames like I was doing at the time, hers about strange looking creatures with large threatening eyes that Pete guessed might have a connection to whoever had hurt her on that visitation. He got this idea because many of these cartoon frames had a background of rain storms in them and of a child sad n being stuck in endless rain.

Right about at this time Pete took a special course in the Montessori Method of teaching reading to deaf children and he used it to teach Ba-chan how to read and all the talk back and forth from the reading lessons loosened Ba-chan's tongue until it gradually got her talking again. Not only did her talking seem a miracle in itself but it also got to make sense out of what had been done to her.

As a critical part of this story I must introduce the fact now that Ba-chan never used a pillow when she went to bed. She just didn't like a pillow. Unusual we thought, but no big deal. Eventually, though, Ba-chan told us that they had beaten her up with the excuse that she wouldn't be quiet in church on that weekend when they took her on visitation. They took her home after church and beat her up. And then, horror of horrors revealed, they put a pillow over her face, so she said, and partially suffocated her and then told her if she ever told anybody, they'd smother her. And that put that level of fear in her that made her act that way that day Len brought her back to us. I'm not exaggerating.

She also talked about things done to her that seemed sexual, but Pete never took that part too seriously because once you start thinking and talking in that way about somebody that you hate, especially from the recall memory of a six-year-old talking about when she was three, nobody would believe you. It was horrible enough that they beat her dumb without accusing them of anything more than that. Though I thought it odd that this young child was putting things in her vagina like pieces of foam rubber from her mattress. Was this possibly evidence that

some of the bizarre tales she started telling about what they made her do sexually were actually true?

What was amazing was that after two weeks of intense focus and her talking about what had happened to her, her lightening up was marked and, lo and behold, on one of these remarkable days she started playfully throwing a pillow on our bed up in the air again and again. And however much it may seem too much made up to fit the story as one might like to tell it, she started using a pillow to sleep with ever after that.

The cartoons June drew she got the basics of from a comic book I was doing at that time about my life. I can't overstate how much the combination of losing three of my kids and Ba-chan being turned into an incubus by the beating shattered me. Frequent sex, believe it or not, and constant comforting reassurance from Pete helped. But he said again and again, "You've got to fight back." And suggested I write up the story of my life as a way of sorting things out in my head. This was back near 40 years ago and try as I may I couldn't put sentences together in any readable way. I was no writer.

He asked then, "Can you draw?" Underground comics, as they were called back in the 60s, were big in those days. "Can you draw?" Well I couldn't. And neither could Pete. But like I said, he was stubborn about everything and said, "It can't be that hard, you just follow the lines you see and put them down on paper as you see them." He tried that doing a drawing of Ba-chan's pretty face, and it came out startlingly well. And he said: "If I can draw and I always hated drawing, you can draw. Just follow the lines and tell the story of your life in drawings, your childhood and your marriage exactly as they happened."

And I did. I entitled it *Minister's Daughter, Missionary's Wife*. Parts were very raw and real. I talked in comix frames openly about the abuse I'd gotten from my parents, some of it from my mother interpretable as sexual abuse. He said what mattered was to be completely honest, so I talked in a few frames about an incident I had with one of my own children. I might as well repeat it here. It's the truth and it does shed some light on the emotional grip I was in all my life. When my first born came along, he's now the head of a Dept. of Political Science in a

university whose name I won't mention, I was utterly devoted to him, at least as well as someone like me could be. He was really the focus of everything minute I had available in my life beyond the household and minor mission chores I was responsible for.

When the second child came along, a girl, I don't know, maybe it was harder to give attention to her because I was so bound like a Siamese twin to the first born. Whatever the reason, she had a hard time going to bed at night and she'd cry. And her crying would drive me crazy because some nights I just couldn't soothe her.

This was in about the third year of my marriage to Len. It was a terrible feeling. You don't try to analyze something like that. You just feel revulsion for yourself, full of self-loathing, so much you don't ever want to think about it. But years alter and now that I'm talking about to again here, obviously there was something wrong with me. And since something like that can't possibly be genetic, the connection had to be with my upbringing, the regular whippings and invasiveness my mother laid on me, which is the really the whole point of my telling this story, how horrible all that stuff done in the name of raising a child to be obedient is. For if something like that was possible for me, forget that I totally resisted it once it came out like that and eventually ran away from this nutty bunch of people, what wasn't possible with others who were all raised the same way, with beatings and minutely rigid rules about everything, rules that hid the sadism and freakishly dominating nature of the people doing this to children. And, of course, I think of Ed Graf Jr. burning those children to death, not all that strange in the context of the way he was also raised as a Graf. And what about a lot of the violence out there that hits the headlines. You are telling me that all these young people's unprovoked mass murders don't have some origin in their own childhoods, that their parents aren't to blame or that the control placed on the parents in our authoritarian society, even if well disguised as such, isn't the ultimate cause of crazy violence like this?

The truth is hard to tell, which is why nobody really tells it, or even sees it in their own lives, prefers to accept the fluff show on TV and in the movies as the reality

out there, and the reality of their own lives. My book turned out very well in two respects. Years after I sent out copies of it around to 1000 people connected with my family and Len, including neighbors and lots of Lutheran ministers, I sent a copy to a fellow named Robert Crumb. He was the premier commix artist of the 60s, hands down in just about everybody's opinion back then. He wrote back that he loved it, "a masterpiece of sorts" he said in a postcard he wrote me. But he didn't like the ending, the very last page of the 20-page comic book that showed me poisoning my mother to death with black widow spiders. He didn't like that because he was a pacifist, against violence generally. But in reality, that was more or less what I did do sending around the comic book like that, poison her reputation and Len's too.

Because the story was believable from my telling the truth about my own "sins", the book caused my jerk of a minister father to be near instantly retired from the ministry, fired pretty much as the pastor of a Lutheran congregation in Waco, TX. He became a real estate salesman after that, interestingly, which should tell you what the profession of minister is really all about, both being most basically inflated sell jobs on people. And the book also caused Len to come down with throat cancer six weeks after I sent the book around to anybody he ever knew. Maybe my cause and effect supposition between emotional travail and cancer is less than provable, but it made me very happy to hear he had cancer even if by odd coincidence after I sent the book out with the intent of hurting him.

The last frame on the very last page of the comic book said it all: "Revenge gives a person a second life." That's an Old Italian saying, you know. And it works. At least it did for me. For I felt a thousand times better after writing the book up and sending it out and hearing from this or that channel the harm it did to these people who had done so much over so many years to make my life miserable. Fighting back, getting revenge, does matter. You don't complain. You don't take your pain out on other people who did nothing to hurt you. You give it back to the bastards who caused it. That's what revolution is, fighting back.

Things changed course in our life shortly after this, which will soon take us back to child murderer, Ed Graf. As we entered the year, 1979, almost ten years after

Pete had dropped out of graduate school, he found out that certain research work he had done on bone growth but kept out of the plagiarizer's hands had been validated by the then newly invented SCM or scanning electron microscope and that he had been credit for the initial discovery in the scientific journal, *Calcified Tissue Research*.

This had Pete head back to Rensselaer Polytechnic in Troy, New York, (RPI), with me and a New Ba-chan in tow. There the news that Pete's theoretical work had been validated observationally with the SCM got Posner removed from his PhD committee and Pete, now regarded as sort of a prodigal son genius, not only his PhD but also a position on faculty in the Dept. of Biomedical Engineering at RPI. This sudden leap in status for the family from cliff dwellers up in an abandoned gold mine in Northern California where we had hidden from Len after running off with Ba-chan to a professor and his beautiful wife and daughter enabled us to travel down to Texas to see my three kids after six long years away from them. Pete with his once long and scraggly 60s hair now cut and trim looked as socially acceptable as Robert McNamara for the occasion.



Neatened up on the way to the in-laws.

Our first stop was Vernon, TX, where Len and my two oldest were living. Then we were off to Waco where the youngest, Nathan, was at some religious indoctrination get together for young people at Baylor and where my parents were still living. Uncle Ed and Aunt Sue looking a touch younger but no less ugly than in that photo of them were also living in Waco as were their kids, now grown Ed Jr. and Craig. Because I was doing my best to make nice on this Texas trip for the sake of my three kids, we went along with my mother's suggestion for us, now respectable what with Pete's doctorate and faculty position in hand, to visit Uncle Ed and Aunt Sue. And we even brought a wedding present to then recently married Craig Graf, my godson, and his wife.

Ed Graf Jr., the future murderer, stood out sharply on this occasion for a couple of reasons. For one thing he was still living with his parents in his thirties. And this was with no recession at hand in the country to rationalize this not usual living situation. Another was that he was, immediately upon introduction to us, afraid and apprehensive about me and Pete, really you'd have to say in a general state of fear and apprehension, because despite Pete's moderately imposing presence, Pete was charismatic enough that almost everybody liked him on first sight, not feared him. Most odd was that right in the middle of a make nice, hi, how're you doing, exchange, Ed Jr. suddenly did an about face and ran out the back door into Sue and Ed's lushly gardened back yard. Also odd is that neither Uncle Ed or Aunt Sue breathed a word, made a sound, stirred the slightest, about this odd action from Ed Jr. that was totally misfit to the occasion of our long belated family visit to the family.

I doubt Ed was seeing a psychiatrist or getting any professional help because LCMS Lutherans just don't do that. It wasn't just that they just resolved such things by prayer and similar, but also that our kind of people in the Graf clan, who were so professionally connected with the church, avoided scandal like a model avoids chocolate cake. This attitude no doubt was instrumental in the suicide of Pastor Rick Warren's son. All the fundamentalist Christians must be ostensibly at all times and in all ways as close to perfect as God wants them and blesses them to be, until they turn out on the front page to be homosexuals like the Rev. Ted Haggard or suicides or child murderers.

Anyway, it was clear that Ed Jr. had problems back then, eight years before the murders, significant enough to call our attention to them. We thought little about it afterward because without my going through the full menagerie of my Graf relatives, most of them ostensibly had observable quirks if not problems like patent ugliness or obesity on a grand scale as showed in Uncle Ed and Aunt Sue possibly as a marker for their more perverse undercoat that produced their first born offspring, Ed, the Child Murderer. I knew the reality of the deviations from emotionally healthy for my own parents, but could only guess at those for the parents that created Ed, the Child Murderer.

The last person on the menu for this trip to Texas trip was my brother, Don Graf. He was over in Lubbock. It was something we weren't keen on doing but did so on repeated cajoling from my parents, whom, like I said, I was inclined to placate in minor ways because of the influence they had on my kids whom I still had great affection for and wanted to maintain contact with. As things would turn out, though, the trip to Lubbock wasn't a minor item. The visit with my parents for a few days had an undercurrent of intense if fairly well concealed hate that stemmed at this point in time not just from my leaving Len and the church back then, but also from the devastating effect the comic book had had on them. One might have expected worse to come through their forced politeness and formal hospitality. And it did come, over in Lubbock.

We bought a box of chocolate doughnuts to bring over to Don's house for breakfast, a little nosh to share with him and his then wife, Ruby. Good thing we brought a full dozen because, lo and behold, also invited to this family reunion sort of breakfast was, surprise, surprise, Ruby's father, a large sized Texas pig farmer, and Ruby's sister and her husband, an enormous Texas speedway owner with the classic back of the neck fat roll and the hard beady eyes of a movie cast Southern bully boy.

What a coincidence! Don's in-laws showed up just at the same time that sister, Ruth, is coming home to see the family for the first time in seven years! The few conversational bites that came from the supersized father-in-law and brother-in-law made it clear that they would intimidate Pete if they could. But it was equally clear that Pete was not pressed in that direction in the slightest for his winning record in street violence, one with a touch of blood spattered on it, made Pete think, correctly or not, sane or crazy, that if he stepped into the ring with Muhammad Ali, he'd beat his ass in. So he gamely engaged in light conversation with the "boys" just like they were all a bunch of good old boys.

Attorney Don Graf's trophy wife, Ruby, was all smiles and asking friendly flirty Southern gal questions of Pete at the breakfast table as though everything was "jus' fine." Her gab was friendly enough to make me wonder how much of it was tinsel and how much personal stimulation by Pete. Brother Don, despite being a

senior partner in the oldest and largest law firm in West Texas did not strike Pete or me as impressive in appearance or demeanor as noted to each other after we left Lubbock. Though it's hard to tell if that was an objectively fair impression by me given how much I disliked this pansy ass creep who wore cowboy boots to Sunday breakfast to keep up his pretense of mother blessed manhood.

The participants on their team seemed eager to hurry through breakfast and I saw why when Pete and I were suddenly invited at the second cup of coffee to check out Don's newly purchased winery out on the outskirts of Lubbock. Participants on this tour will include Ruth and Pete and Don and his two large sized male in-laws, but not Ruby or her mousy sister. Despite a sharp chill brought back no doubt from earlier times of punches in the shoulder, with Pete leading the way as recklessly brave as a teenage matador and I still as naïve as a newborn rabbit, we all jumped into our respective vehicles and off we went.

That picture worth a thousand words would do better at this point, but we have to settle for the verbal snapshot of my brother, Don, standing on one side of the table at the winery where corks are put in the wine bottles with a cork hammer. He is banging one such hammer on the table surface as his insulting voice starts to throw emotional punches at me, then again and again. This, as planned by him, but of course, is making me progressively more and more uncomfortable and starting to feel shaky as in my victimized days of old. Don knows me well, which buttons to push. And next to me on my side of the table, getting progressively more irritated while naively trying to disguise his bubbling up fury for the sake of maintaining some semblance of family civility, is Pete. To complete the picture worth a thousand words, the two henchmen in-laws are standing about fifteen feet away, waiting for the real action to begin that will call them on stage too.

As the tempo of Don's bangs with the hammer and bangs with his voice at me increases in tandem with Pete's less and less well disguised look of violence about to come out of him, I suddenly got a sense of full security. Pete's supremely excessive physical confidence from ghetto living on the Lower East Side after he dropped out of school blocked out any feelings of fear as his faced welled up in a twist of violent hatred towards Don for what he was trying to do to me. He looked

as though he were about to leap on Don and strangle him to death, which kept me sane and intact. And at this point in the upward spiraling drama, Don dropped the hammer, his face fell and he slunk away from the table and from the two of us.

The tour of the winery was then as suddenly declared over as the invitation to it at Don's house at breakfast was suddenly tendered. Out in our car on a dirt road that circled this winery muddied from rain the night before, I took a good look at Pete's face and told him to look in the rear view mirror to see what he looked like. Christ, he said, I look like some kind of killer you might see in the movies. He said he hoped he hadn't made a bad impression. I wondered for ten seconds if he really meant that. Another ten seconds after that, though, Pete said, as I realized also before he spoke us, "Punk faggot piece of shit couldn't pull the trigger," meaning that Don was supposed to provoke Pete into a fight that the other two would join in on to either beat Pete up, three on one, and/or to call the sheriff in on it to have Pete locked up for assault or such and be destroyed in that way. No wonder my mother pushed so hard and so smoothly to get us to come to Lubbock.

Don and his in-laws at this point are in a car in front of us on this puddle drenched road. And as we slowly meander down its muddy path, their car comes to an abrupt stop. And, of course, as we are right behind them, so does ours. We wait tensed. It is a long minute and a half until Donald Lee Graf jumps out of their car and runs over to Pete's driver side window, sputtering nervously, "We got stuck in the mud, honestly!" He seemed like he was afraid that Pete really was about to kill him, whatever the specific motive for his saying that. I wasn't thinking that at the time, though, but rather blurted out to Don from my passenger side spontaneously, surely this aggressive only because I sensed such fear in his face, "Were you in California with Len the summer of 1974?" At that the fear on his face turned to a look of terror and half bobbing his head up and down twice in affirmation, he ran back to his car, jumped in and drove away.

At that I knew he was the bastard who did it, the one who killed my baby Bachan's soul or gave the order or suggestion to do it or was seriously in on it

somehow, likely carrying out a plan that had originated in my mother's dark heart. And beyond that and being a conservative closet gay, a pedophile too?

Less than a year later back up in New York we received a letter out of the blue from Don's wife, Ruby, telling us that she had just divorced Don. It was filled with bitter spiteful words obviously designed to hurt Don as much as she could by telling us about his humiliation of being left by her. Understand that this was to two prime enemies he had at this point in his life. We guessed that Ruby's male relatives seeing what a coward punk her meal ticket lawyer husband was must have taken her beyond the critical point of putting up with the bad small of a subpar husband, well off lawyer or no. I recently read a piece from a 40s issue of *The New Yorker* about the Nuremberg Trial that talked about Goebbels escape from execution by taking cyanide indicating that Goebbels was the exception to the rule that all bullies are cowards. Whether Goebbels was or not, Don wasn't such an exception.

Pete's stay at the university in the early 80s didn't last long. He was a favorite of his students, being the only professor I have ever heard of who received a standing ovation at a final exam, this from three classes he taught engineering thermodynamics to. And he had the highest student evaluations in the School of Engineering at RPI for the ten years they were conducted. But he found his position in the hierarchy and the degree of control over him not that much improved from his days as a graduate student. Ten years of pretty much complete freedom made him a poor candidate for the upper middle class role of a university professor.

So after gleaning considerable pleasure in paying back the four professors who had fucked with him in his graduate school days in various ways, revenge actually improving one's life and mood considerably as one finds out when one takes it, we went back to a life of anarchy, no rule over you, with all that implies for survival being a true, and somewhat dangerous, adventure.

After two years at the university we devoted all of our attention, outside of survival and the kids who came along, to solving the problem of hierarchical control and the unhappiness it generated, and the problem of violence enhanced

by weapons, especially nuclear weapons. From his personal experiences as a street fighter in his younger days, he understood that once a fight starts with punches thrown, the fellow leaning towards the losing side will do ANYTHING to keep from losing, no care as to the consequences since losing is near the equivalent of death.

The translation of this scenario to the world stage is simple and straightforward. If Russia was losing in a war with the United States, would it use nuclear weapons? It has already said it would a dozen times in a dozen ways over the last few years. And if we were on the losing end, truly losing, would we use nuclear weapons to keep that from happening? Whatever a moralist lacking in actual fighting experience might conclude, those who have felt the emotions involved know better. And as to the start of such a fight, where do you think this proxy conflict in the Ukraine between America and Russia is heading? Certainly not to a settlement at the peace table as ongoing events make eminently clear.

The culmination of this conclusion unavoidable for anybody who understands violent aggression from a personal sense of it is that only getting rid of the weapons that cause the horrendous deaths and crippling of war can solve the problem. You can't get rid of violence without castrating all the male members of the human race. We're already getting close to doing that in America psychology and with not very palatable results other than for the erectile dysfunction medication manufacturers. You have to get rid of weapons to get rid of the mayhem of major violence.

And in its bringing about a much more equable balance of power between individuals, the total elimination of all weapons in a society most definitely ameliorates the problem of the loss of freedom from excessive social control because, while one man with a gun can control ten others without one, when all are denied the use of weapons, the level of control possible in a society greatly decreases to produce a concomitant increase in personal freedom, which is the most important enabler of success in the pursuit of happiness in life. No freedom, no happiness, as is obvious in this joyous world mankind currently inhabits. To

these ends we worked hard to write up and then publish the newspaper article that directs all men and women to achieving A World with No Weapons.

What would a world with no weapons be like? The blueprint we have in mind is a rough sketch, for details in building a realistic Utopia have to be open to progressive refinement. But this is our first take on it. A world with No Weapons would have to be divided into two sectors, the biggest sector consisting of a large number of city states of about a quarter to a half million people, none of whom would have any weapons at all. This banning of all weapons is not just for the individuals living in it, but for the city state as a whole, including the police, who must in A World with No Weapons enforce any rules a city state wishes to impose on its citizens without the use of weapons. This proviso gives maximum freedom for the citizens of the city state, for as we see again and again in the world today, the wishes of the people in popular uprisings against tyranny are inevitably brought down and the people defeated by police power that relies first and foremost on the weapons that police have and that the people don't have. This is not to say that rules decided by each city state can't exist along with punishment of some sort for breaking the rules. But such enforcement and punishment must occur without weapons. There are no guns and no jails in the city states of A World with No Weapons as makes for the true balance in power needed to keep individual freedom at a maximum.

This is freedom in the real sense even if obtained at a loss of order and efficiency. The next broad question is how the ban on weapons would be enforced. It would be done by the second sector in A World with No Weapons, the Guardians of Freedom. Anyone holding a weapon whose sole use is for resolving conflict is put to death. This rule also extends for anybody who uses a tool like a knife in fighting with another person. The maximum weapons allowed in a conflict that can only be settled by force is one's fists. Any use of a weapon results in a sentence of death executed by the Guardians of Freedom.

Mercy would be shown. And that would be especially to the young. This mercy would be in the form of a reprieve is possible by the rolling of a lucky number in a dice game to be considered in the mathematics section of this work. In it the lucky

numbers assigned and the probability of escaping the death penalty that accrues from rolling one of them would be a function of the circumstances involved in breaking of the no weapons law. Invasion of another city state is also punishable by death. Those are the two principle rules enforced by the Guardians of Freedom. The city states decide on all other rules they wish to impose on their citizens, few, it should be obvious, given that the only way to enforce them would be through the muscle power of police who have no weapons themselves.

There is obviously a lot of uncertainty in an existence without rules enforceable by weapons, lots of excitement in it for each person or family or clan or wider group must protect themselves for the most part. But there is also lots of freedom and from our own experience in living the life of rebels, the intoxicating pleasure of freedom greatly outweighs the lack of protection by armed police, too much of whose actions nowadays are unjust and excessive in force as part of their daily routines.

Another great question is: How do you get to this World with No Weapons? For most who hold the advantage of power will necessarily be reluctant to give it up. It is only the consequence of continuing down the deadly path we are currently on that can convince a critical mass of people currently in power to join in this quest. Mankind is heading inevitably for nuclear war, the math that follows this essay and story section will show in an unarguable way. That is why we will be spelling out that fate for man with mathematical precision. If the inevitability of the nations of the world going to that most undesirable place of mega-death without a banning of weapons is not understood, no effort will be made in that direction. Read the math that follows.

This effort must be led by the United States because only it has the moral authority and the military power to make it happen. We have the carrot to offer sensible nations to get them to lay down their weapons with the reward of getting us all to A World with No Weapons and peace that will ensure that mankind continues to live on. And we have the stick to hit reluctant nations with in terms of our military might. Accomplishing this task of saving the world from nuclear annihilation effectively requires a coalition of the leaders of sensible

nations who will be the future Guardian of Freedom to come together to effectively conquer the world against all of those unwilling to join in this effort. Winning such a war for worldwide peace absolutely requires the carrot of peace that our mathematics say will come from nations laying down their weapons. If that diplomatic weapon didn't exist, pure military might could never work to conquer the world for the sake of peace and freedom.

But it must also be stressed that military might matters because some nations will not want to give up their weapons and will only do it when there is a gun to their heads or when the trigger is pulled to eliminate them from obstruction of the goal entirely. If this effort must kill a billion to save the other 6 billion, that's much better than all of us going down in Nuclear Armageddon. My guess is that Russia will join with us once Putin sees that this path is the only alternative to the end of the world; and possibly China, too, though, less certain than Russia. Personally, I have absolutely nothing against the Chinese. It's just that there's less cultural cohesion between them and us than between us and quasi-western Russia. And frightening were Chinese plans revealed on May 26 in The Global Times - a newspaper regarded as the mouthpiece of the Chinese government. It said: "If the United States' bottom line is that China has to halt its activities, then a US-China war is inevitable in the South China Sea." The article added that Beijing does not want a conflict with the US - "but if it were to come, we have to accept it". This sounds more like a harbinger for war with this nuclear armed country than peace and, if anything, a further strong piece of evidence for why A World with No Weapons is necessary.

In that regard the question comes up as to the Guardians of Freedom in the weapons free Utopia having all the weapons and the city states having none. That is unavoidable. History shows a repeated control of territory within grasp by one empire particular empire. There are two dangers that an existing empire must concern itself with. The first is being overthrown by outside nations or empires. And the other problem that concerns the rulers of an empire is revolution from within. In a world that is entirely dominated by one empire or ruling group, the concern about invasion from the outside that is the primary worry of the ruling

states of today, like the USA and Russia, does not exist in A World with No Weapons.

This makes a major difference in two ways. It very much lessens the need to enslave the people in the city states under it, very much unlike today where international stability requires that nations or empires control their people to a significant degree in order to maintain the military and associated economic power needed to protect themselves from conquest by competing nations or empires. The only problem is for the Guardians of Freedom, who are admittedly the rulers of this new social matrix, to retain control over the city states. And that is quite easy given that the Guardians of Freedom have all the weapons and the city states absolutely none. As to those who see this as a scam given that there will still be rulers and the ruled, the circumstances of this social set up make for a singularly novel world situation, whose factors for continued survival are so significantly changed as to make for significant changes in the lives of people.

To those who want Heaven on earth, it no more exists than Heaven after death. A common sense understanding that we will reinforce with precise mathematical analysis makes clear that the above solution to man's problems of war and tyranny is the best social matrix that can be devised. Once that is realized, if people are not already so stupidly inculcated with ideology that fails to appreciate the realistic fearful expectations we should all have and understand the limits of hopeful expectation in terms of delusions about the future that distort realistic foresight, they will join together to do their best, all of us, to make this one long shot for the survival of the human race become a reality.

In the above regard it must be stressed that a major impediment to the clear thinking needed to pull this off is religious delusions about our future. On the one hand, God isn't going to save the world from nuclear annihilation because there isn't any God except in people's infantile hopes that there's something "up there" who loves us like some all-powerful parent that loves a desperate child. That thought is a near total impediment to we the people doing something real to stop nuclear annihilation. The thought of just wishing it will happen and praying to something that's not there is not going to save us.

And the second spiritual delusion as impediment to saving the world is that even if the world does go to nuclear hell, all the “good” people are going to Heaven, so who cares if God destroys the world in a nuclear war for whatever Divine Reason He might have. This is banana brained idiocy that lies beyond further comment. If there is any nuclear salvation for mankind, we the people are going to have to make it happen. For these reasons we make it a point to make it clear that the thought of God and the emotional feelings people have about him arise only as an odd screw up in human nature of those in great emotional need assuming instinctively that there’s somebody out there somewhere who might help them. This, of course, is taken advantage of by the exploiting class over the centuries to maintain their privilege and domination over the people under them by promising them some impossible recompense for it “after death” through the clerics they support and control. This is so stupid that religion should be ridiculed in every guise it manifests itself in. Beyond the horror that hides the dark reality of those who wear the halo of religion, saving the world unavoidably requires clear thinking rather than childish superstition as empty comfort.

Really, it is impossible to condemn religion too much. No matter the nonsense by some that bloodthirsty cruel ISIS is not religious extremism, none of those murdering bastards would have done what they did, whether ending 3000 lives and destroying the happiness of 3000 families with the 9/11 attack or beheading young Americans if they were not urged up to do what they do from the notion that some Superior Being up there would make them exquisitely happy after they gave their lives in martyrdom. This lunacy of the notion of Allah giving his butchers 20 virgins each in Heaven does not minimize the monstrous idiocy of Christian belief and the respect it is given despite 10,000 priests and ministers screwing 30,000 nine-year-old boys in the ass all these years. If any other group committed crimes that heinous and that broad a level, the group would be rightly decried as a group of disgusting monsters, and not allowed to continue to exist. The reason that they are allowed to get away with it is because these slimy Christian cleric assholes preach obedience to authority as the centerpiece interpretation of the Ten Commandments, obedience to the ruling class whose lives are filled with sex parties and equally degenerate privileges that are equally as disgusting when viewed through the prism of the suffering of families and their kids whose economic struggle to survive in the face of the wealth of our ruling

class is a true horror. Religion for all its moralizing, turns a blind eye to the true miseries of life and offers the beaten in spirit a recompense of an existence after death that only a moron or a three-year-old could possibly accept as practically tenable. Short of suggesting that all clerics are deserving of corporal punishment and elimination from the human race, whether Muslim or Christian, all religion should be forcibly flushed down the toilet once and for all.

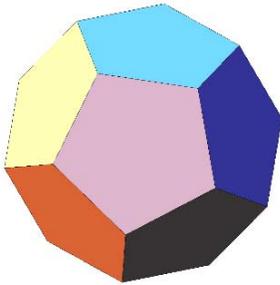
As to who is making all this noise, this is me a decade ago at age 67 along with grandson, Angel Thomas and his mom, June. Rebellion against abusive authority keeps the smile on your face!



Ruth, Angel T. and June

A natural question after hearing this story filled with so much emotion saturated action is: what is the cause of what we do? Are our emotions in themselves the cause what we do, leading us to behaviors associated with positive, pleasant emotion and away from the negative, unpleasant, emotions? Or are the emotions just there as sort of signs on a highway, pointing us in a direction but leaving what we do with those feelings to some higher element in our psyches, some “free will” dynamic that acts like a Supreme Court in matters and makes the ultimate

decisions? To answer that we have to get back to mathematical analyses in following sections that continues on from where we left off at the end of Section 4.



6. The Emotions of Partial Success

Life to a great extent is a game of chance, of payoffs and penalties and of the probabilities of incurring them. To develop this perspective in the most complete way, we consider next the emotions involved in complex behaviors that consist of a number of sub-behaviors, each with their own sub-goals, all of which must be successfully achieved in order to obtain a final end point of getting a payoff or of avoid a penalty.

Developing this mathematically from the principles we have covered so far and showing the results to align with what can be argued is universal emotional experience and with observable emotional displays in this section will provide further proof of the validity of this understanding of our emotional machinery.

To understand the emotions associated with achieving sub-goals in complex behaviors, we alter the V prize game to one where you must roll a lucky number of |2|, |3|, |4|, |10|, |11| or |12| not once but **three times** to win a prize. We stipulate the cash prize for this game to be $V=\$2700$.

The probability of rolling a |2|, |3|, |4|, |10|, |11| or |12| lucky number on any one roll of the dice is from Eq3, $Z=1/3$. This designates for the first roll of the dice a $Z_1=Z=1/3$ probability of rolling a lucky number; for the second roll, $Z_2=Z=1/3$; and for the third roll, $Z_3=Z=1/3$.

$$(47) \quad Z_1=Z_2=Z_3=Z=1/3$$

The U uncertainties or probabilities of failure for each toss of the dice are

$$(48) \quad U_1=(1-Z_1)=U_2=(1-Z_2)=U_3=(1-Z_3)=(1-Z)=2/3$$

The probability of rolling a lucky number of |2|, |3|, |4|, |10|, |11| or |12| on all three rolls of the dice is the product of the Z_1 , Z_2 and Z_3 probabilities, which is given the symbol, z , (lower case z).

$$(49) \quad z = Z_1Z_2Z_3 = Z^3 = (1/3)^3 = 1/27$$

The improbability or uncertainty in making a triplet roll of a lucky number is u , (lower case u).

$$(50) \quad u = 1-z = 26/27$$

The expected value of a successful triplet roll for a $V=\$2700$ prize is, in parallel to Eq5a for the one roll game,

$$(51) \quad E = zV = V - uv = Z_1Z_2Z_3V = (1/27)(\$2700) = \$100$$

This E value is also a measure of player's pleasant expectations or hopes of winning the game. The displeasure of disappointment from failure to make a successful triplet roll is, from the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10 with $R=0$ and in parallel to Eq10a for the one roll game,

$$(52) \quad T=R-E = 0 - zV = -zV = -(1/27)(\$2700) = -\$100$$

The pleasure in the thrill or delight of making the triplet roll, $R=V=\$2700$, is, in parallel to Eq11

$$(53) \quad T=R-E = V - zV = (1-z)V = uV = -(-uV) = (26/27)(\$2700) = \$2600$$

Now we want to derive the emotion felt from rolling a lucky number on the **first** of the three required sequential rolls of the dice. After a first toss that succeeds in rolling a lucky number, the probability of winning the $V=\$2700$ prize by tossing lucky numbers on the next two rolls increases from $z = Z_1Z_2Z_3 = 1/27$, the probability of success before any tosses are made, to

$$(54) \quad Z_2 Z_3 = (1/3)(1/3) = 1/9$$

Hence the expectation of completing the triplet roll, **after** a lucky number is rolled on the first toss, increases from the $E = Z_1 Z_2 Z_3 = \$100$ initial expectation in Eq51 to

$$(55) \quad E_1 = Z_2 Z_3 V = (1/9)(\$2700) = \$300$$

E_1 is the expectation of making the triple roll and winning the $V = \$2700$ prize **after** the first roll is successful. Next we want to ask: what, if anything, is gotten or **realized** when the first toss is successful? It is not $R = V = \$2700$, for the V prize is not awarded for just obtaining the first lucky number. You need all three.

What is realized is also not $R = 0$, for that comes about only when the player fails to make the full triplet roll. Rather, what is realized when the first roll is successful is the $E_1 = \$300$ **increased expectation** of ultimate success of Eq55. This understanding of the increased $E_1 = \$300$ expectation as what it is that is realized allows us to specify E_1 as a realization that can be denoted with the R symbol as

$$(56) \quad E_1 = R_1 = Z_2 Z_3 V = \$300$$

Now we can use the Law of Emotion of $T = R - E$ in Eq10 to obtain a T transition emotion that arises from a successful first toss of the dice. To do that we specify the T term in $T = R - E$ with a subscript as T_1 ; specify the R term in $T = R - E$ as $R_1 = Z_2 Z_3 V$ from Eq56; and specify the E term in $T = R - E$ as the expectation felt prior to the first toss, $E = ZV = Z_1 Z_2 Z_3 V$ of Eq51. This renders the Law of Emotion of Eq10 as $T_1 = R_1 - E$. Then, with $U_1 = (1 - Z_1)$ from Eq48 we obtain T_1 as

$$(57) \quad T_1 = R_1 - E = E_1 - E = Z_2 Z_3 V - Z_1 Z_2 Z_3 V = (1 - Z_1) Z_2 Z_3 V = U_1 Z_2 Z_3 V \\ = (2/3)(1/3)(1/3)(\$2700) = \$200$$

Now we ask: what kind of emotion does $T_1 = U_1 Z_2 Z_3 V = \$200$ represent? We develop an answer for that by next recognizing that the $T = uV$ **excitement** or delight in Eq53 from successfully making the triplet toss and winning the $V = \$2700$ prize can be written, given $R = V$ for the successful triplet toss, as

$$(58) \quad T = Uv = uR$$

And we also see that we can substitute $Z_2Z_3V=R_1=E_1$ from Eq56 into the

$T_1=U_1Z_2Z_3V$ term in Eq57 to obtain T_1 as

$$(59) \quad T_1 = E_1 - E = U_1Z_2Z_3V = U_1E_1 = U_1R_1$$

The parallel of $T_1=U_1R_1$ in Eq59 to the $T=uR$ thrill of success in Eq58 identifies $T_1=U_1R_1$ as the thrill experienced from successfully rolling the first lucky number, a thrill felt by the player, even though no money was awarded, just for rolling the first lucky number needed to get him on his way to winning the prize. Note that the intensity of this **partial success thrill**, $T_1=\$200$ of Eq57, is considerably less than the $T=\$2600$ excitement in Eq53 that arises from successfully making the full triplet roll and winning the $V=\$2700$ prize.

This thrill or excitement from partial success in a complex behavior derived in the above from the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion is also observed in games other than the Lucky Numbers dice game. Indeed, it is routinely seen on TV game shows like *The Price is Right* in a contestant getting very excited about entry into the Showcase Showdown towards the end of the show by their spinning the highest number on the Big Wheel. This along with many parallel examples of partial success excitement on TV game shows provides an empirical validation of the Law of Emotion we have just used to derive this partial success excitement.

We saw above that what is realized from getting the first lucky number is an increase in expectation from the initial $E=zV=\$100$ expectation of Eq51 to $E_1=Z_2Z_3V=\$300$ in Eq55. We next ask, then, what is it that is realized in rolling the second lucky number after the first lucky number has been rolled? It is a greater expectation yet of making the full triplet roll and winning the $V=\$2700$ prize, an increased expectation that derives from the probability of winning the V prize now being $Z_3=1/3$. Labelling that expectation now as a realization, R_2 , we calculate it to be

$$(60) \quad R_2 = E_2 = Z_3V = (1/3)(\$2700) = \$900$$

The transition emotion that comes from rolling a second lucky number after having gotten the first one is labeled T_2 . From the Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$, with T now specified as T_2 and with R specified as $R_2=Z_3V$ from Eq60 and with E_1 understood as the expectation that arises after the first lucky number is rolled, $E_1=Z_2Z_3V$ from Eq56, we obtain

$$(61) \quad T_2 = R_2 - E_1 = E_2 - E_1 = Z_3V - Z_2Z_3V = (1 - Z_2)Z_3V = U_2Z_3V \\ = (2/3)(1/3)(\$2700) = \$600$$

Note that we can now express $T_2 = U_2Z_3V$ in the above from $Z_3V=R_2$ of Eq60 as

$$(61a) \quad T_2 = U_2Z_3V = U_2R_2$$

This makes it clear from the parallel of $T_2=U_2R_2$ to the excitement of $T=uR$ of Eq58 that $T_2=U_2R_2$ is the excitement felt when the second lucky number is thrown subsequent to the first lucky number being rolled. And we can also use the Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$ of Eq10, to derive the thrill or excitement of getting the third lucky number after rolling the first two lucky numbers as awards the $V=\$2700$ prize. What is realized in that segment of the behavior is getting the $R=V=\$2700$ prize. Specifying the expectation that precedes getting the third lucky number as $E_2=Z_3V$ of Eq60, we see the Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$, expressed as $T_3 = R - E_2$, obtaining a T_3 transition emotion of

$$(62) \quad T_3 = R - E_2 = V - Z_3V = (1 - Z_3)V = U_3V = (2/3)(\$2700) = \$1800$$

Expressing $T_3=U_3V$ in the above from $R=V$ as $T_3=U_3R$ and noting its parallel to the $T=uR$ excitement of Eq58 identifies $T_3=U_3R$ as the excitement of rolling the third lucky number to win the $V=\$2700$ prize after the first two lucky numbers have been rolled. Note that the intensity of the $T_3=\$1800$ excitement from rolling the third lucky number to win the $V=\$2700$ prize is significantly more pleasurable than the $T_1=\$200$ and $T_2=\$600$ excitements from the antecedent partial successes.

Such substantially greater excitement from actually winning the prize relative to the prefatory partial success excitements is what is observed in game shows like *“The Price is Right”* where actually winning the Showcase Showdown often has the winner jumping up and down and running around screaming very excitedly. This broad fit of observed excitement in the amounts suggested by this analysis from the Law of Emotion is a form of empirical validation of the Law of Emotion even if not a perfectly measured quantitative fit.

Note also that the Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$, of Eq10, is further validated from the three partial excitements, T_1 , T_2 and T_3 of Eqs57,61&62 summing to the $T=uV=\$2600$ excitement of Eq53 that arises from making the triplet roll in one fell swoop as could be made from throwing three pair of dice simultaneously.

$$(63) \quad T_1 + T_2 + T_3 = \$200 + \$600 + \$1800 = \$2600 = T = uV$$

The numerical agreement of the sequential three roll process with that of the simultaneous rolling of three pair of dice shows an internal consistency that is a further validation of the $T=R-E$ Law of emotion on which the analysis was based.

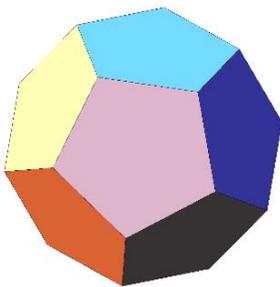
Also validating the Law of Emotion in this operation is our analysis next of what happens if you roll the first two lucky numbers successfully but then fail on the third roll as causes you to fail to win the $V=\$2700$ prize, $R=0$. To evaluate the T_3 transition emotion that arises from that scenario we use the $T_3=R-E_2$ form of the Law of Emotion in Eq62 that applies after the first two lucky numbers are rolled, except in this case has the third roll fail with the R realized emotion then being $R=0$.

$$(64) \quad T_3 = R - E_2 = 0 - Z_3V = -Z_3V = -(1/3)(\$2700) = -\$900$$

This $T_3 = -Z_3V = -\$900$ transition emotion is the disappointment felt in failing to make the triplet roll *after* rolling the first two lucky numbers successfully and experiencing their $T_1=\$200$ and $T_2=\$600$ partial success excitements. Note that this disappointment of $T_3 = -Z_3V = -\$900$ is significantly greater than the $T = -zV = -\$100$ disappointment in Eq52 that would arise from failure to roll the three lucky numbers simultaneously in one fell swoop with three pair of dice . Note the $-\$800$ increase in disappointment displeasure relative to the $T = -\$100$

disappointment displeasure in the $T_3 = -\$900$ disappointment displeasure of Eq64 and note that this $-\$800$ increase is perfectly equal, though opposite in sign, to the $T_1 + T_2 = \$200 + \$600 = \$800$ sum of partial success excitements of Eqs57&61. This understands the additional $-\$800$ displeasure of disappointment arising from failure on the third roll as a negation of the prefatory $\$800$ pleasure of excitement from the first two successful rolls. This fits the common emotional experience of an increased let down or disappointment when initial partial success is not followed by ultimate success in achieving a goal, the additional letdown felt, one might say, when one counts one's chickens before they hatch and they then fail to hatch. The scenarios that wind up in ultimate success in Eq63 and in ultimate failure in Eq64 quite fit general emotional experience and as such are another validation of the Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$, of Eq10, from which they were derived, and of the totality of this control theory approach to understanding life.

Again we take another break from the arduousness of this mathematics to ramble out another realistic patch of modern life in the human beehive that should help dispell the hogwash take on life flooded through our minds from the wealthy ruling class controlled media and pulpit.



7. Peter's Story

Why would a person spend 50 years of their life trying to understand all of nature including human nature in mathematical form? The motive is a bit on the grand level. To just spit it out gives the appearance of somebody with his head in the

clouds as some might say of a person who's devoted his life to developing all this math in order to save the world from nuclear annihilation. Would be world saviors are as much objects of ridicule as they are of attention.

I will try to dodge that bullet by next relating a few of the essentials of my life's story. This is not so much to glorify myself, but rather because I am at least sure of the truth of what I have actually experienced in my life and am able to shape it in fairly precise mathematical terms because of my science based educational background.

As my direction in life is unusual, so my history is unusual. To understand it and apply the conclusions that can be drawn from it to people's lives generally is to make clear that nuclear annihilation from man's aggressive tendencies and stupidity is not all that improbable especially if we don't make the great effort needed now to begin the task of preventing that from happening.

I'll begin my story starting with my genetic history after I drop this weapons ban Op-Ed piece on you that I wrote back in 1986 towards the end of the Cold War with Russia, then the Soviet Union.

Weapons ban should be part of our culture

By PETER V. CALABRIA

After nuclear war? The phrase is a strange and disconcerting one. It presupposes the unthinkable, that a nuclear war will actually happen. It also suggests there will be an "after" for the human race, that there will be survivors.

This may or may not be the case. But assuming there will be a nuclear war and there will be survivors, we pose the question as to whether

we could then change society, change its culture and morality, in such a way as to insure that a second nuclear war will not take place.

Preposterous, you say? Why not make an effort to change it now so nuclear war does not take place at all. This sounds like a very reasonable suggestion, but my own feeling is that the changes in society required to prevent a nuclear war would have to be drastic. And it goes against the grain of human nature for people to undergo drastic changes unless there is great motivation. Such motivation to make the world safe from nuclear war does not exist as long as people think that nuclear war is not a real or immediate threat.

Assuming a nuclear war does take place and that there are survivors, what changes can be made in global society to prevent a second? The obvious suggestion is that nuclear weapons should be banned. For a variety of reasons, such a ban would not be sufficient.

Even assuming such an agreement between nations could be enforced, which is doubtful, the ingenuity of man is entirely capable in time of creating new and better weapons of mass destruction.

The Public Column

L

E
I was
News
Sowell's
two diffe

My fi
been?";
very w
talked a
classes
presider
who we
aren't al

Now
started
well. My
be a Gen
er, was
sail ba
ship be
on —
one, the
that dat
sailed, b
mans
four-ma
money
Holland
arate st
and they

For t
world w
helped
supplies
of war.
beginnin
in the
Pearl H
we were
most es
Even r
band we
served f
the Eurc
He went
trials as
history.

NCE...
ICE...

WE CAN
JAIT

affirming
ick of the
ning the
anding up

Knickerbocker News, Albany, NY, May 1986

Now that you know where I'm going with all this, I'll tell you where I'm coming from. My heritage going back to my great-great-grandfather on my father's side is unusual enough to provide an entertaining break from the math even if the final judgment on it is that it is irrelevant to the problem of nuclear war.

I can't guarantee the factuality of the story of my ancestors 100%. I was told it by a cousin, Estelle, shortly before she passed away, who was told it by her mother, my Aunt Lena, before she passed away. Estelle when alive was the head school psychologist in the city of Danvers, MA, and I have no reason to doubt what she told me. If the facts I lay out seem at first to have little to do with the main points of interest of violence and unhappiness and the banning of weapons, please be patient. I will I hope successfully tie things together after I lay out the main facts without making moral judgment.

My great, great grandfather, Pasquale, lived in Naples back during the unsettling time when it was an independent kingdom that Napoleon had invaded and conquered. The social disorder of that post French Revolution era may explain some of the unusual events in his life that he got away with. The story told me by Estelle goes that he raped a 15-year-old girl by the name of Josephine, said to be the most beautiful girl in Naples, this on some dirt back road in Naples. I repeat that this is what I was told. I am here just repeating it.

Anyway, great, great grandpa soon enough married Josephine and had 16 children by her. He supported the family with a silk factory that he won in a card game. Estelle also said that he was a brawler, which fits both the rape part and the gambling part. All this should tell you that he was not the King of Naples nor an aristocrat nor a day laborer there, rather more an unusually free-thinking and free-acting individual.

Two things happened towards the end of Pasquale's life that have some bearing. One is that his youngest child, a boy named Giacomo (James, Jimmy), rebelled against his father because the old man picked up a younger consort late in life and abandoned Josephine in some manner. Jimmy's rebellion took of the form of his

“running off” (my cousin’s word) with an opera company. She said that was like running off to join a rock band in the late 60s here in America. She also said that this opera company that toured all over Europe and went by the name, Paglia, or something like that was the best or one of the best in all of Europe.

She might have been possibly exaggerating here I have guessed because the connection of Jimmy to it seemed from the way she talked about it a matter of family pride. For this Jimmy, my great grandfather, was high up in it as the librettist, the fellow who is responsible for the opera company getting all the songs sung as perfectly as possible.

The other thing that happened is that this semi-beloved great, great grandfather of mine lost the silk factory towards the end of his life, divine justice the morally bent reader will be happy to think. Now I could go on here to rationalize and to some degree excuse this patriarch’s so-evil-on-the-face-of-it behavior. But I will save the mathematical science explanations for such a life until the next section and get on now with the history of this lineage of mine into the next generation.

Jimmy, the librettist, had a daughter, my grandmother, whom I only knew as Nonna when I was little. When she was young, a teenager, she toured around Europe with her father. She was very beautiful. I saw photos of her when she was young. You think that somebody who lived way back then would look "old-fashioned." She was a knockout.

In the opera company also was a violinist from Sicily, Gaitano (Guy) Calabria. Now I want to make clear that there is a large gulf in status between a violinist who plays in the orchestra of an opera company, sometimes referred to as “second fiddle”, and the librettist, a position without which an opera can't operate.

Grandfather to be, Guy, though, obviously didn;t think that way. As you might have guessed, Guy liked Nonna. This was back when she was 15. And Nonna liked Guy. And Jimmy didn’t like this at all. Stay away from my daughter was the message sent out. Instead Guy, my father’s father as years passed, eloped with Nonna. Jimmy was furious and did his best to break Guy into pieces by blackballing him all over Europe.

Guy skirted around the wrath of angry father-in-law and scooted off to Cairo, Egypt with Nonna where he lived with her for many years. This was without benefit of marriage. They had two kids there, my aunt, Lena, and my uncle, Geno, my father's older sister and brother.

Grandpa Guy supported himself by playing violin in the nightclubs of Cairo, I was told. This part of Estelle's story I can vouch for independently because we had at home when I was growing up a cigar box full of rings and other jewelry fashioned in strange images like coiled snakes that my father told us were thrown to his father, the violinist, after his performances, this by sultan type people in the audience who presumably thought well of the music he played. This implies that Guy was a better than average violinist, which has bearing on the next part of the story.

Everything was not so bad for the family down there in Cairo. But this continued on only until World War I started. At which point Arab Egypt ceased to be a cool place for renegade Europeans. At that point, Guy scooted off for America and married Nonna because it was effectively necessary for getting past the immigration people at Ellis Island or wherever it was he entered America as an immigrant.

Bad timing, though. Problem once he got there was that radio was coming of age in America at that time and people no longer went out for their entertainment at night as much because they stayed home listening to this new and wonderful instrument over which music could be directly broadcast into the one's living room.

There being no work or money for this fine Sicilian violinist, he had little choice but to become a dig-in-the-dirt day laborer. He found this very humiliating. To be clear, it wasn't just that he was too proud to do manual labor. It was that immigrants like that were treated like shit.

My other grandfather on my mother's side whom we'll come to in a minute or two and whom I grew up with in the house next door to his and talked to all the time made this clear: Italian immigrants were the niggers of the day. Anyway,

whether too spoiled to work with his hands or too abused when he did, Guy turned to opium to cheer himself up and cool himself off, a trick I presume he picked up in Cairo where opium was as available and frequently used as weed is now in America.

My cousin, Estelle, said her mother, my Aunt Lena, used to go to the ships docked in the North End of Boston when she was a little girl to buy the opium. End of this part of the story is that he died of an overdose when my father was not yet four-years-old.

Now what is this story telling us? For now, whatever you think. I'll provide a bit of biomathematical analysis in the next section after sketching out my mother's side of my lineage here first. My grandmother, Carmella, and grandfather, Giovanni, (John), came over from Catania, Sicily shortly after World War I in 1918. I know little about their forbearers except for photos of their parents that show them looking like serious, very determined people with some character.

Carmella and John were also rebels of a sort in being first cousins, a little incest in the family on this side to balance the incident of rape on the other one might think. My grandmother was an excellent seamstress. My grandfather, six foot six tall and with a temper that blazed hot 24/7, had been a cavalry officer in WWI. They had ten cents between them and my grandmother's sewing needle when they got off the boat. When they died, many years later, they left an estate to their five children, my aunts and uncles, of three million dollars.

Most everything else I could say about them was bad. They were nuts about money, like a Sicilian version of the Beverly Hillbillies. All their kids, my maternal aunts and uncles and my mother, were pieces of shit, selfish in the way all money worshippers are.

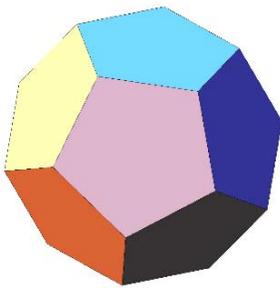
My grandfather, John, gets one vote on the plus side in this criticism. When my grandmother insisted, haranguing me at the top of her lungs, to cut my beard during the late sixties (she *was* a millionaire by this time) and I told her to go fuck herself, my grandfather shouted out as I walked out the door of their house,

“Sempre, Pietro, sempre.” That means “Always, Peter, always.” For that I always had a fond memory of the bastard.

OK. Now, where are we. What about this raping and running off with 15-year-olds and first cousin incest? Is that stuff really that bad? I mean great-great-grandfather, Pasquale, did marry Josephine and had 16 goddamn kids by her. And my mother’s incestuous parents were the classic immigrant folks who make good in America. What we need here is to look at this sort of behavior through the lens of evolution, if you Trump, asshole sucking right-wing science deniers don’t mind.

There's more to say about myself if anybody is interested. My own feeling at the moment as I am in the middle of writing all this up is that I'd rather shut up at this point. I can't decide as I am caught between the joy of privacy fused with security of silence and the need to provide evidence for ideas from hands on life experiences. Let me put the rest of this first draft on ice for the moment and talk about evolution and then see what I think when I'm finished with the next section on natural selection.

Should also make it clear that certainly as important if not more so is understanding evolution because nothing one can say about human nature, emotionally and behaviorally, makes any sense without understanding the evolutionary principles that brought human beings into existence to begin with.



8. The Mathematics of Natural Selection in Evolution

This is a doubly messy task because the evolutionary principles obvious to every biomedical professional have been so ground into the dirt of doubt by the

aforementioned right-wing science deniers. It is also problematic because evolution derived pleasure and displeasure as the immediate motivators of behavior have been held up to question not only by the hogwash religious doctrines of the last two thousand years but also in modern times by the less obvious but no less hogwash pseudo-science of clinical psychology.

For those reasons we provide a precise mathematical take on natural selection in evolution that begins with a formula for interest in a savings account found in all junior high math texts that even the most rabid conservative double-talkers and most popinjay psychologists cannot deny or misinterpret. The quantitative conclusions that follow at the end of this section were first arrived at by the classical population biologists of the 1920s. Hence, we are not claiming that what we are about to say in this section is a new discovery, only rather a more streamlined redo of technical material most of which is now a solid part of biology's standard rubric.

We proceed from scratch. The formula for annual interest in a savings account is

$$(65) \quad x = x_0 (1 + g)^t$$

The x_0 term is an initial deposit in a savings account, the principal, and x is the amount of money in the account after t years assuming no more money is deposited. We use g as the symbol for the annual interest rate or **growth rate** of money in the account. In a savings account that has an **annual interest rate** of $g=5\%=.05$, if you start with an $x_0=\$100$ principal and you keep that money in the bank for $t=2$ years, the $x_0=\$100$ will grow according to Eq65 to

$$(66) \quad x = x_0 (1 + g)^t = \$100(1.05)^2 = \$110.25$$

You could also open a savings account that compounds the interest more often, say with a **quarterly** or **daily** compounded interest. This alters the interest formula of Eq66 a touch to

$$(67) \quad x = x_0 \left(1 + \frac{g}{m}\right)^{mt}$$

The m term we've put in the interest formula is the number of times a year the interest is paid or compounded. So with the same initial deposit of $x_0 = \$100$ and same annual interest rate of $g = 5\% = .05$, if the savings account had quarterly interest paid, which is $m = 4$ times a year, the money in the account would grow in $t = 2$ years via Eq67 to

(68)

$$x = x_0 \left(1 + \frac{g}{m} \right)^{mt} = \$100 \left(1 + \frac{.05}{4} \right)^{(4)(2)} = \$100 (1.0125)^{(8)} = \$110.45$$

If a savings account had interest compounded daily or $m = 365$ times a year, the \$100 originally deposited in the account would grow over $t = 2$ years to

(69)

$$x = x_0 \left(1 + \frac{g}{m} \right)^{mt} = \$100 \left(1 + \frac{.05}{365} \right)^{(365)(2)} = \$100 (1.000137)^{(730)} = \$110.52$$

An alternative formula for the daily compounding case is

(70)
$$x = x_0 e^{gt}$$

The letter, e , in the above is Napier's constant, $e = 2.7183$. For $x_0 = \$100$ and $g = 5\% = .05$ and $t = 2$ years we calculate from Eq70 the same $x = \$110.52$ we obtained from Eq69 as

(71)

$$x = x_0 e^{gt} = \$100 (2.7183)^{(.05)(2)} = \$100 (2.7183)^{(.1)} = \$110.52$$

Eq70 is a standard formula for exponential growth that works both for a population of dollars or a population of biological organisms. Exponential growth is often expressed in differential form as

(72)
$$dx/dt = gx$$

For the exponential growth of living organisms, the annual growth rate, g , is assumed to be constant over time much as it often is for dollars in a savings account. An important difference, though, is that while dollars in an interest-bearing savings account just grow or increase in number, biological populations both increase in number by reproduction and decrease in number by death. Hence *their* growth rate, g , depends on both the birth rate of new organisms, b , and on the death rate of existing organisms, d .

$$(73) \quad g = b - d$$

This modifies the exponential growth formula of Eq72 to

$$(74) \quad dx/dt = (b - d)x$$

When exponential growth takes place for dollars in a savings account, new dollars are able to grow or effectively reproduce themselves from the moment they come into existence at the compounding time. But multicellular organisms, which include man, have a developmental period of so many months or years to get to reproductive, that is, sexual maturity. Hence they cannot reproduce according to Eq74 strictly speaking.

That problem is obviated, though, when "birth" is understood not as the coming into existence of a newborn infant but rather as the coming into existence of a sexually mature adolescent that *can* biologically reproduce immediately, cultural taboos against notwithstanding. That take on reproduction as the replication by sexually mature organisms of a sexually mature organism well fits well the exponential growth formula of Eq74's mathematical dictum that reproduction must be able to take place at the moment of "birth." This understanding has important ramifications for parental love of children as will be discussed in depth later.

For now, though, we want to talk about a couple of other biological population growth principles. Pure exponential growth that exactly follows Eq74 specifies no limit on the size of a population that can be achieved. A population that starts out with $x_0=10$ organisms and grows with a growth rate of $g=1.1$ organisms per existing organisms per year consists by Eq74 after $t=10$ years, $x=598,785$ organisms in it; and in another 10 years, upwards of 358 billion.

In reality, of course, there is a limit to how many organisms a particular environment or niche can sustain. That limit is called in biological science the **carrying capacity** of the niche and given the symbol, K.

Back in the 19th Century, a Belgian mathematician, Pierre Verhulst, came out with a modification of the exponential growth formula of Eq74 that takes the reality of limited growth into account. That formula is, with the K carrying capacity understood as the maximum population size in the niche,

$$(75) \quad dx/dt = (g/K)x(K - x)$$

The **Verhulst equation** for limited growth, also known to biologists as the **logistic equation**, is written above in differential form. Its solution written below, also called its **time equation**, is a somewhat messy thing,

$$(76) \quad x = Kx_0 / [(x_0 + (K - x_0)e(\exp - gt))]$$

This tells us, for example, that a population of x organisms that has an initial size of x₀ organisms, a growth rate of g organisms per existing organisms and a carrying capacity for the niche of K organisms will eventually grow in size to that limit of x=K organisms with a sigmoid shaped curve as shown below.

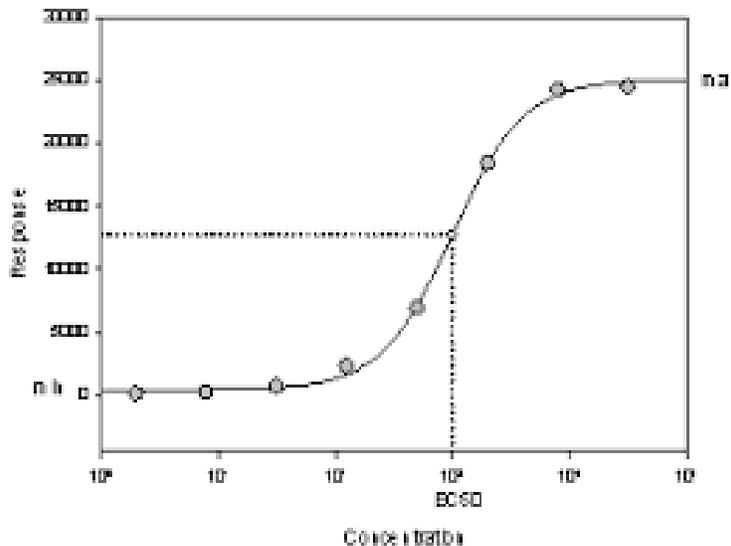


Figure 77. Verhulst Equation for the Limited Growth of a Population

A second impediment to the growth of a population in a niche is the presence of a competing population in the same niche. To mathematically formulate how a rival population interferes with growth, consider first two populations, #1 and #2, that

grow exponentially in an unlimited way (with no K carrying capacity limit), both according to Eq74. For population #1 doing this, we write

$$(78) \quad x_1 = x_{10}e^{g_1t}$$

$$(79) \quad g_1 = b_1 - d_1$$

And for population #2, we write

$$(80) \quad x_2 = x_{20}e^{g_2t}$$

$$(81) \quad g_2 = b_2 - d_2$$

The x_{10} and x_{20} terms are the initial sizes respectively of the #1 and #2 populations with g_1 and g_2 their annual growth rates and with x_1 and x_2 the sizes of the populations at any time, t , in years. Now for mathematical expediency that will make sense as we proceed, let us consider the **sum** of the x_1 and x_2 population sizes, $x_1 + x_2$, at any time, t . It is from Eqs78&80,

$$(82) \quad x_1 + x_2 = x_{10}e^{g_1t} + x_{20}e^{g_2t}$$

This $x_1 + x_2$ sum of two exponentially growing populations is helpful in a practical way because it allows us to track the fractional size of each population over time, t , that is, to track both the x_1 and x_2 sizes of each population relative to the $x_1 + x_2$ sum of the two populations. From Eqs78&82

$$(83) \quad \frac{x_1}{x_1 + x_2} = \frac{x_{10}e^{g_1t}}{x_{10}e^{g_1t} + x_{20}e^{g_2t}}$$

And from Eqs80&82

$$(84) \quad \frac{x_2}{x_1 + x_2} = \frac{x_{20}e^{g_2t}}{x_{10}e^{g_1t} + x_{20}e^{g_2t}}$$

Now consider these two populations suddenly transplanted from unlimited growth in their individual niches to both growing together in a common niche, one with a carrying capacity, K , understood as the limit to the total number of organisms that the niche can support of both populations combined. When that K limit is reached, the sum of the two population sizes is accordingly equal to the K carrying capacity.

$$(85) \quad x_1 + x_2 = K$$

While the sum of the two populations, $x_1 + x_2$, remains fixed at K after that limit is reached, as long as the growth rates of the two populations are not the same, $g_1 \neq g_2$, the x_1 and x_2 sizes of the two populations will continue to change over time as we can see by substituting Eq85 into Eqs83&84 to obtain

$$(86) \quad x_1 = \frac{Kx_{10}e^{g_1t}}{x_{10}e^{g_1t} + x_{20}e^{g_2t}}$$

$$(87) \quad x_2 = \frac{Kx_{20}e^{g_2t}}{x_{10}e^{g_1t} + x_{20}e^{g_2t}}$$

Next, let us understand the $x_1 + x_2 = K$ stipulation of Eq85 to apply also to the initial sizes of the two populations, x_{10} and x_{20} as

$$(88) \quad x_{10} + x_{20} = K$$

This obtains Eq86 as

$$(89) \quad x_1 = \frac{Kx_{10}e^{g_1t}}{x_{10}e^{g_1t} + (K - x_{10})e^{g_2t}}$$

Then dividing the numerator and denominator by e^{g_1t} further obtains this as

$$(89a) \quad x_1 = \frac{Kx_{10}}{x_{10} + (K - x_{10})e^{-(g_1 - g_2)t}}$$

And we can simply Eq90 further yet by expressing the difference in growth rates, $g_1 - g_2$, in the denominator as F_1 , called the **fitness** of the #1 population.

$$(90) \quad F_1 = g_1 - g_2$$

This simplifies Eq89a to

$$(91) \quad x_1 = Kx_{10} / [(K - x_{10})e(\exp(-F_1))]$$

Now note the quite perfect similarity in form of this to the Verhulst time equation of Eq76. That tells us that we can express Eq91 in the same differential form as the Verhulst differential equation of Eq75, F_1 substituted for g as it was for the time equations of the two.

$$(92) \quad dx_1/dt = (F_1/K)x_1(K - x_1)$$

Applying the same treatment to the #2 population stipulates the fitness of the #2 population, F_2 , in parallel to F_1 in Eq91 as

$$(93) \quad F_2 = g_2 - g_1 = -F_1$$

With that we specify the x_2 size of population #2 over time in parallel to Eqs64&65 for population #1 as

$$(94) \quad x_2 = Kx_{20} / [(K - x_{20})e(\exp(-F_2))]$$

$$(95) \quad dx_2/dt = (F_2/K)x_2(K - x_2)$$

A graph of x_1 and x_2 from Eqs 91 & 94 makes clear the fate of these two competing populations. Consider the niche they both occupy together to have a carrying capacity of $K=100$ organisms, initial sizes of $x_{10}=1$ for the #1 population and $x_{20}=99$ for the #2 population and growth rates of $g_1=2$ and $g_2=1$ with x_1 over time shown in blue and x_2 in red.

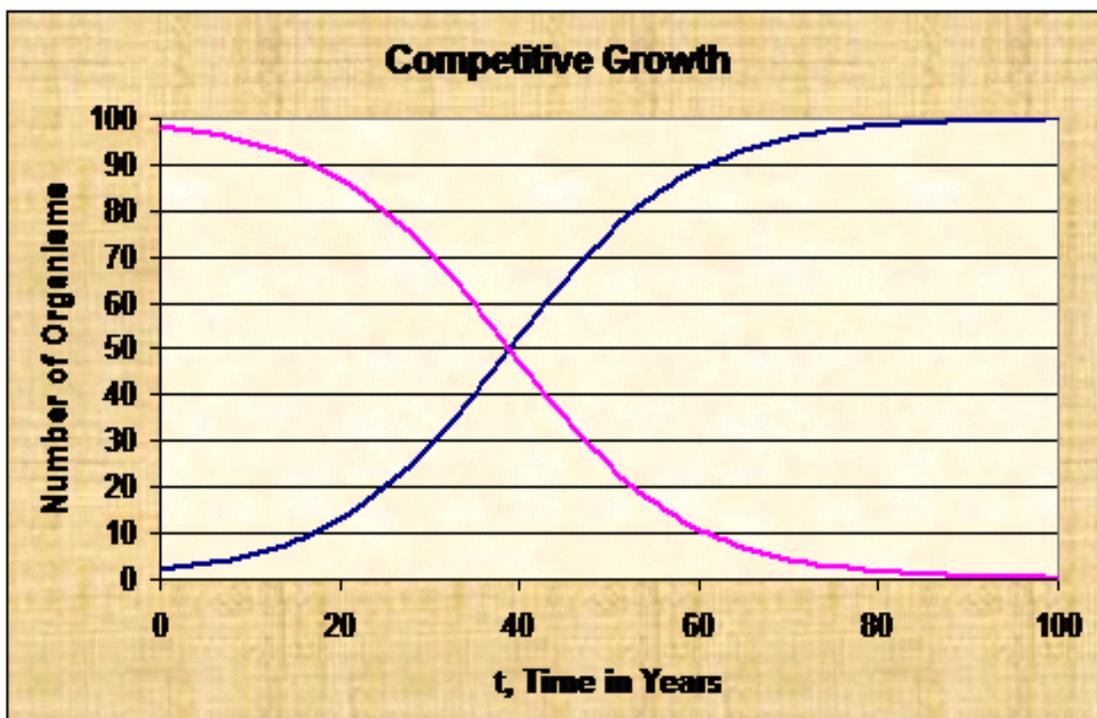


Figure 96. Competitive Population Growth or Natural Selection

The #1 population in blue in its having the higher growth rate of $g_1 = 2$ flourishes over time while the #2 population in red with a smaller growth rate of $g_2 = 1$ dies out over time or goes extinct in the niche. For these and for any two populations competing in the same niche, the one with the greater g growth rate or positive F fitness, here population #1 in blue with $F_1 = g_1 - g_2 = 2 - 1 = 1 > 0$, eventually takes over the entire niche at $x_1 = K = 100$; and the one with the lesser g growth rate or

negative F fitness, here population #2 with $F_2 = g_2 - g_1 = -1 < 0$, decreases in size and eventually dies out or goes extinct in the niche at $x_2=0$.

We can get a better intuitive sense of this natural selection process by expressing the F fitness functions of the two populations in terms of their b and birth and d death rates.

$$(97) \quad F_1 = g_1 - g_2 = (b_1 - d_1) - (b_2 - d_2)$$

$$(98) \quad F_2 = g_2 - g_1 = (b_2 - d_2) - (b_1 - d_1) = -F_1$$

This mathematical description of natural selection fits the description of natural selection given in non-mathematical language by the Harvard grandmaster evolutionist, Ernst Mayr:

“.....it must be pointed out that two kinds of qualities are at a premium in selection. What Darwin called natural selection refers to any attribute that favors survival, such as better use of resources, a better adaptation to weather and climate, superior resistance to diseases, and a greater ability to escape enemies. However, an individual may make a higher genetic contribution to the next generation not by having superior survival attributes but merely by being more successful in reproduction.” (Mayr, Ernst; One Long Argument: Charles Darwin and Modern Evolutionary Thought; Harvard Univ. Press, 1991, p.88).

Our mathematical formulation of natural selection derived above can also be developed from the post WWI work of the classical population biologists, R.A. Fisher and J.B.S. Haldane as part of the accepted rubric of biological science. The advantage in having a mathematical formulation for natural selection is not only in showing the underlying mechanism of the dynamic but also in providing, as we shall see momentarily, a clear understanding via the F fitness function of how our basic human behaviors and emotions for survival, reproduction and combat come about for population #1 as more readily seen with the help of a slight transformation of the F_1 fitness function of Eq97 to

$$(99) \quad F_1 = -F_2 = b_1 - d_1 - b_2 + d_2$$

It is also useful to further generalize Eq99 for two competing populations referred to a **rival population** whose rates and fitness carry the subscript, R, and a **focus population** whose rates and fitness carry no subscript.

$$(100) \quad F = b - d - b_R + d_R$$

We will use these names of the focus population and the rival population in the discussion that follows. The focus population's chances of its F fitness being positive, $F > 0$, and of it flourishing from generation to generation and avoiding extinction in the niche are greatest when its members behave in such a way as to maximize their population's F fitness.

This **maximization** of F entails **minimizing** the d death rate in $F = b - d - b_R + d_R$ via the members of the focus population having a repertoire of capable survival behaviors that maximize their life span and with that minimize the d death rate of the population.

The pleasure for survival success that has evolved from that as from eating food and getting warm is too waste time debating whether or not fitness positive behaviors evolved to be pleasant in order to motivate individuals to do them and stay alive.

And in the same vein also are the unpleasant emotions associated with survival failures that include hunger pangs, freezing in the cold and the pain of being eaten by a tiger, all of which emotionally motivate individuals away from activity that brings about such deleterious situations and emotions.

It is also clear from Eq100 that the F fitness and likelihood of evolutionary success for the focus population are optimized by **maximizing** the b birth rate of the population and the d_R death rate of the rival population. While the mathematical logic of this conclusion is unarguable, its implications may be somewhat startling.

Let us examine these two maximizations one at a time. For a female animal, the number of children born to her in her lifetime lies within a narrow range. Few, and certainly very few physiologically healthy females have no offspring. In that regard there is an upper limit on the number of offspring for human females of about a dozen or so. For male animals, though, about half in nature are out and

out losers, not reproducing at all. And the upper limit to how many children a male may sire is potentially very high, for the male need mate with a female for only in a few minutes to father a child. The pleasure of this, unarguable for a human male, is not a matter of debate. Nor if we pay attention to the sadness of the heartache in male losers in the game of love is the displeasure of failure in reproductive love in question.

Note carefully also from our laying out of the mathematical constraints of exponential growth that underpins natural selection following Eq74 of "birth" understood not as the coming into existence of a new born infant but rather of a sexually mature adolescent, that humans should be and are programmed emotionally to raise their children to adolescence. This accounts for the great pleasure felt in family love that arises from the successful raising of children to sexual maturity or adolescence. And with that as with failure in all fitness optimizing behaviors comes the displeasures of sadness and guilt from failure, short term and long, to have and raise happy, potentially successful children.

Let's also look at optimizing fitness by maximizing d_R , the death rate of rivals we see in Eq100, $F=b-d-b_R+d_R$. As bloody as this sounds, and it often does happen in war, aggression between rival groups does not always go that far. And that's because killing off rivals one has in a common niche or territory isn't necessary to maximize their d_R death rate. Rather driving them out of the niche with aggressive behavior produces the same outcome mathematically of lowering the size of the rival population in the niche.

In either case, though, the point should be made that there is considerable pleasure in success in such battles, whether they go to completion via murder in war or in just driving the enemy off what becomes your territory when you are successful. Tamped down instances of this in sport make the fact of the pleasure experienced in a territorial win not a subject of debate. Men enjoy and desire the glory of competitive success, at the sport and at the blood level.

Note in animals that male-to-male aggressive competition that maximizes the d_R of rivals, including via territorial battles, is closely associated with reproductive competition between males over access to females as optimizes F fitness by maximizing the b birth rate of a male's population or lineal/genetic group. For non-human animals this is unmistakably true as one can easily see by watching

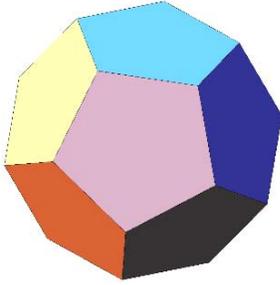
any one of a thousand species in any one of a million nature films broadcast on television. This extends to human males, at least in primitive cultures. And in some instances, as with the ancient Chinese emperors, Genghis Khan and in more recent times, Ibn Saud, the early 20th Century founder of Saudi Arabia, hundreds of children are sired with many women.

An important phenomena in this regard is the pleasurable, persistent sex drive of men, especially for males with the power to win in competition. The emotional motive to mate for men extends beyond the pleasure reward for it to considerable displeasure for failure to mate. Indeed, so-called "motiveless" mass murders committed by young men are often able to be attributed upon a careful reading of such cases to reproductive relationship failure and frustration.

Much of this animal level, aggressive sexuality in human males was muted following the development of agriculture and the institution of slavery that agriculture and metals-based weaponry made possible, which we will consider thoroughly in a later section.

What we have done in this section on natural selection is show that man's basic behaviors of survival, reproduction and mortal combat all derive from evolution as activities that optimize the F fitness function of Eq100. And we have also concluded from this evolutionary analysis that mans pleasant and unpleasant emotions are the motivating factors for these behaviors.

In the next two sections we will, with Lucky Numbers based arguments, mathematically derive the principle that the function of our pleasant and unpleasant emotions is to control and motivate our fitness optimizing behaviors of survival, reproduction and mortal combat, collectively everything we experience in life.



9. The Law of Supply and Demand

We will do that by using the Law of Emotion of Eq10 to derive an emotion based form of ***The Law of Supply and Demand*** of free market economics. Because the Law of Supply and Demand is an empirically proven and thoroughly accepted principle that even right-wing science deniers do not deny, this will offer firm proof of the validity of the Law of Emotion along with clear mathematical proof that human behavior is most essentially motivated by the pleasure and displeasure components of our emotions.

The textbook Law of Supply and Demand of standard economics theory tells us that the price of a commodity is an ***increasing*** function of the ***demand*** for it and a ***decreasing*** function of its ***supply***. An alternative equivalent expression of the Law of Supply and Demand it is that the price of a commodity is an ***increasing*** function of the ***demand*** for it and an ***increasing*** function of its ***scarcity***, with scarcity understood here as the inverse of availability or supply.

To derive the Law of Supply and Demand as such from the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion of Eq10, we will use the triplet Lucky Numbers, $V=\$2700$ prize game that we earlier examined back starting with Eq47. We will put a twist on it now, though, of considering obtaining the first lucky number in the triplet sequence as a commodity, as something that can be purchased with money. This implies the existence of an agent who runs this Lucky Numbers triplet game and who not only pays off the V prize money to a winner but who also can sell this commodity of the first lucky number to the player for a price.

We next need to determine the ***fair price*** of that first lucky number the agent would ask the player to pay. We saw earlier in Eq49 that rolling the first lucky

number changes the probability of winning the $V=\$2700$ prize from $z=Z_1Z_2Z_3=1/27$ before the dice are rolled to $Z_2Z_3=1/9$ in Eq54 after the first lucky number is rolled successfully. The fair price of the first lucky number when you buy it rather than roll it is just the difference between the $E_1=\$300$ expectation of Eq55 as the average payoff when the first lucky number has been attained and the $E=\$100$ expectation as average payoff of Eq51 prior to any of the three lucky numbers being attained. Given the symbol, W_1 , the fair price for the first lucky number is then what is gained in cash measured expectation after the first lucky number is attained.

$$(101) \quad W_1 = E_1 - E$$

This W_1 fair price of the first lucky number can be expressed in terms of the variables of E_1 and E that are found in Eqs57&59.

$$(102) \quad W_1 = E_1 - E = Z_2Z_3V - zV = Z_2Z_3V - Z_1Z_2Z_3V = (1 - Z_1) Z_2Z_3V = U_1Z_2Z_3V = T_1 = U_1E_1 = \$200$$

To review for clarity, $W_1=\$200$ is the fair price for the first lucky number from having it increasing the average payoff from rolling the dice from $E=\$100$ to $E_1=\$300$. From the perspective purely of economic optimization, the player as the buyer of this commodity of the first lucky number would want to pay as little for it as possible and the agent as its seller would want to charge as much for it as possible. From these competing perspectives, then, the price of the first lucky number could be anything the player and the agent might bargain for and agree to. What we are defining as the **fair price**, however, $W_1=\$200$, is strictly the \$200 increase in average payoff from $E=\$100$ to $E_1=\$300$ that comes about from having the first lucky number.

With that understood, we will show now that the W_1 fair price expressed in Eq102 as $W_1=U_1E_1$ is a basic form of the Law of Supply and Demand rendered in terms of the **emotions** people feel for the scarcity and demand for a commodity. Recall our restatement of the Law of Supply and Demand as stipulating the price of a commodity as an **increasing function** of both its **scarcity** and the **demand** for it. Now we will understand $W_1=U_1E_1$ in Eq102 to be an increasing function of the

scarcity of the first lucky number as measured by the uncertainty in rolling it on the dice, $U_1 = (1 - Z_1) = 2/3$. And we will understand $W_1 = U_1 E_1$ to be an increasing function of the **demand** for the first lucky number as measured by the $E_1 = Z_2 Z_3 V = \$300$ average payoff that having the first lucky number provides. Note that the assumption here is that the greater the average payoff in cash a commodity provides, the greater will be the demand for that commodity. In this way, $W_1 = U_1 E_1$ of Eq102 is understood as a statement of the Law of Supply and Demand in terms of the most elemental terms. This derivation of the Law of Supply and Demand, a firm empirical law of economics universally accepted as correct, from The Law of Emotion of Eq10 is a powerful validation of that law.

There are a number of important nuances we see from this. First note the equivalence in Eq102 of the $W_1 = \$200$ fair price for the first lucky number and the $T_1 = W_1 = U_1 R_1 = \$200$ pleasurable excitement or delight of rolling the first lucky number in Eqs57&59. This equivalence of the T_1 excitement and the W_1 fair price in $T_1 = W_1 = U_1 R_1 = \$200$ tells us that the price paid for a commodity is a measure of the pleasurable excitement or delight the commodity brings to the buyer who has it. This equivalence fits economic reality quite well as seen from TV commercials for automobiles, vacations and foods that advertise these products **as exciting**.

The value of the first lucky number measured in terms of the W_1 **amount of money** one would spend for it can also be understood in terms of the **amount of time** one would spend acquiring the money needed to buy it. Given that the time spent to obtain money, risk-based investments aside, is directly proportional to the money earned in a wage specified in dollars per hour, W_1 is also understandable as an amount of time spent to get the first lucky number. That has this $W_1 = U_1 E_1 = T_1$ Law of Supply and Demand telling us that people spend their time to obtain commodities that provide the pleasure of excitement, whether the time spent working to get the money needed to purchase the commodity or time spent directly to obtain the commodity and the pleasurable excitement it provides. This strongly suggests that people spend their time doing things that get them pleasure, in the above case, the pleasure of excitement.

We can also derive a parallel form of this elemental Law of Supply and Demand from a triplet v penalty game, one that requires the toss of three lucky numbers to avoid the penalty. For that we must back up a bit and take a look first at the T transition emotions of partial success that come from playing such a triplet Lucky Numbers v penalty game. Consider this game as one a player is forced to play and that exacts a penalty of $v=\$2700$ unless the player rolls three of the lucky numbers of $|2|$, $|3|$, $|4|$, $|10|$, $|11|$ or $|12|$. In parallel to the $E= -Uv$ expectation of Eq16 with $u=26/27$ from Eq50 as the improbability of rolling three lucky numbers, the fearful expectation of incurring the $v=\$2700$ penalty has a monetary value for the intensity of its displeasure of

$$(103) \quad E= -uv= -(1-Z_1Z_2Z_3)v= -(26/27)(\$2700)= -\$2600$$

The Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$, of Eq10 then derives the uv emotion of relief in avoiding the v penalty by successfully rolling three lucky numbers on three pair of dice tossed simultaneously, the outcome being $R=0$, as

$$(104) \quad T=R-E=0-(-uv) = uv=\$2600$$

When the game is played with three sequential rolls of a pair of dice, the increased expectation of avoiding the $v=\$2700$ penalty after rolling a lucky number on the first toss of the dice, E_1 , understood as what is realized from the successful toss, R_1 , is, with the improbability of escaping the penalty after getting the first lucky number specified as $1-Z_2Z_3$,

$$(105) \quad E_1=R_1= -(1-Z_2Z_3)v= -(1-(1/9))\$2700= -(8/9)(\$2700)= -\$2400$$

Hence the transition emotion, T_1 , is, via the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion expressed as $T_1=R_1-E$, and with $R_1=E_1$ from the above

$$(106) \quad T_1=R_1-E= \\ E_1-E= -(1-Z_2Z_3)v-[-(1-Z_1Z_2Z_3)]=(1-Z_1)Z_2Z_3v=U_1Z_2Z_3v=\$200$$

Now recall the equations of $T=UV$ excitement of Eq11 and of $T=Uv$ relief of Eq18 in order to understand $T_1=U_1Z_2Z_3v$ in Eq106 in parallel to the partial excitement of $U_1Z_2Z_3V$ of Eq57 in the V prize awarding game as the **partial relief** obtained from rolling the 1st lucky number in the v penalty game. The rest of the analysis of this

triplet v penalty game then perfectly parallels that for the triplet V prize awarding game except that the partial emotions felt in sequentially rolling the first, second and third lucky numbers are those of partial relief in escaping a $v=\$2700$ loss of money rather than of sequential partial excitement in attaining the $V=\$2700$ prize in the triplet prize awarding game.

Understanding this enables us to develop the W_1 **fair price** of the 1st lucky number in the triplet v penalty game as $W_1=E_1-E$ of Eq101, but with E_1-E for the v penalty game specified in parallel to $E_1-E=U_1Z_2Z_3V$ for the V prize awarding game as

$$(107) \quad W_1 = E_1 - E = U_1Z_2Z_3v = T_1 = \$200$$

This form of an elemental primitive Law of Supply and Demand tells us that people spend their money for commodities that provide not only $T_1=U_1Z_2Z_3V=W_1$ **excitement** as seen in Eq102 but also $T_1=U_1Z_2Z_3v=W_1$ **relief**. These two forms of an elemental Law of Supply and Demand, of Eqs102 &107 provide strong validation for the Law of Emotion of Eq10 that derived them from the observation that people **do spend** their money and time to obtain commodities that provide relief and excitement as is readily seen in the full spectrum of TV ads, all of whose products are advertised as providing **relief** of some sort, as with insurance and antacids and laxatives, or **excitement**, as with automobiles, foods and vacations.

This analysis in sum develops a picture of people **motivated** to spend their money and/or their time to obtain the pleasures of excitement and relief and concomitantly to avoid the displeasures of anxiousness and fear whose resolution by appropriate behavior provides those respective pleasures. Understanding behavior to be motivated by the pursuit of pleasure and the avoidance of displeasure is the essence of what is called **psychological hedonism**. This sense of hedonism is **not** an encouragement for people to seek pleasure and avoid displeasure, **but rather** a conclusion drawn from the above mathematical analysis that people **just do behave** in that way, that is, to achieve pleasure and to avoid displeasure as their motivation to behavior as a fundamental characteristic of human nature.

We have derived this conclusion from what is basically an economic analysis that considers money to be of the item of value that motivates behavior through the pleasure associated with getting money and the displeasure associated with losing money. To generalize psychological hedonism to its fullest, though, you need also to take into consideration the *visceral emotions* that motivate behavior at the most basic levels from unpleasant visceral emotions like hunger and cold and from the pleasant emotions that derive from eating, getting warm, having sex and from social interactions that include success in competition, violent and non-violent.

To show that we need to express the forms of our just developed elemental Law of Supply and Demand as simply as possible. In Eq107 we saw the equivalence of the W_1 fair price with T_1 partial success excitement, $W_1=T_1$. This implies that the very simplest form of T excitement we saw in Eq11 as $T=UV$ for the single number Lucky Number game should also be a measure of the fair price, W , one would pay for this one lucky number.

$$(108) \quad W=T=UV$$

Now in recalling Eq11a, we see the value of the T excitement in getting the $V=\$120$ prize in the single number Lucky Number game to be $T=\$80$, which allows us to express the fair price of that one lucky number when it is purchased to be

$$(109) \quad W=T=UV= \$80$$

It is easy to see $W=\$80$ as its fair price when you consider what happens if you pay that price for each of three single number games. The total price paid would be $3(\$80)=\240 and this gets the player $\$120$ per each game played for a total of $3(\$120)=\360 for the three games, making the net winnings for the three games $\$360-\$240=\$120$. And this is exactly what is won on average from three games that are played strictly from throwing the dice with no lucky numbers purchased. Hence $W=T=\$80$ is, indeed, the fair price for the lucky number, which makes $W=T=UV$ of Eq108 the simplest form of the elemental Law of Supply and Demand with U , the uncertainty in rolling the lucky number as a measure of its scarcity or

difficulty in getting it and V , the cash value of the prize the measure of the demand for it.

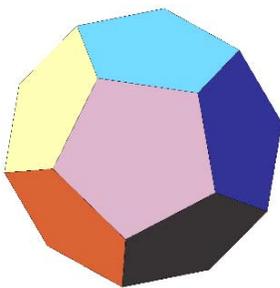
We want to elaborate on this a bit more now by writing this most simple $U=UV$ form of the Law of Supply and Demand with a slight algebraic manipulation as

$$(110) \quad W=T= UV= -(-UV)$$

This is readily interpreted as a person spending W dollars or an equivalent amount of time to obtain UV excitement and/or to eliminate $-UV$ anxiety, the two emotional experiences generally being concomitant and simultaneous. And, without our going through the details of its derivation, we can a parallel Law of Supply and Demand for pricing based on $T=uV$ relief from the Lucky Numbers v penalty game with $W=T$ assumed from earlier considerations as

$$(111) \quad W=T=Uv= -(-Uv)$$

This tells us that people also spend W dollars or an equivalent amount of time to obtain Uv relief as the elimination of their $-Uv$ fears as also fits general emotional experience.



10. The Visceral Emotions

Up to this point, we have focused on the emotions that are patently associated with goal directed behavior, what might be called our basic emotions like fear, hope, relief and the like. Now we want to venture into an analytical understanding of what we will call our **visceral emotions** like hunger, food taste pleasure, pain, the feeling of cold and the pleasure of warming up.

To understand the visceral emotions mathematically we consider a person behaving not to **avoid losing v dollars** but to **avoid losing v^* lives**, the main manifestation of that being behavior directed to avoid losing one's own $v^*=1$ life that we commonly refer to as **survival behavior**. This has one feel a E^* **visceral expectation** from a situation that is a threat to losing of one's own $v^*=1$ life to some probability, U^* . This E^* visceral expectation has form parallel to the $E = -Uv$ fearful expectation of losing one's money in Eq16 of

$$(112) \quad E^* = -U^*v^*$$

The E^* visceral expectation of potentially losing one's life encompasses a **spectrum of feelings** familiar to us all from our day to day survival activity. Which specific feeling is experienced depends on what the specific threat to one's $v^*=1$ life is. It might be a lack of food or a lack of air or a lack of warmth. We'll first consider the E^* visceral expectation that is instinctively felt when one's $v^*=1$ life is **highly likely** to be lost, say to a probability of $U^*=.99$, from a significant scarcity of the air needed to breathe. This E^* expectation of the possible loss of one's $v^*=1$ life from a lack of air, an unpleasant feeling as can be appreciated from the negative sign of this $E^* = -U^*v^*$ expectation, is the **feeling of suffocation**. It has a strong overtone of fear in it, indeed panic fear, that is close in feeling to the fear of losing money of $E = -Uv$ of Eq16.

Now much as the T transition emotion of relief is felt when the threat of losing money is removed by rolling of a lucky number in the v penalty Lucky Number game, $T = -(-Uv) = Uv$ of Eq18, so there is a **visceral transition emotion**, T^* , of relief felt when air becomes available to the suffocating individual as eliminates the E^* feeling of suffocation, which is entirely parallel to Eq18 as

$$(113) \quad T^* = -(-U^*v^*) = U^*v^*$$

Individuals who have been in such a suffocating situation, as in waterboarding, will readily testify to experiencing a great deal of relief when air is provided, with the intensity of the pleasure of the relief dependent on the extent of suffocation, itself a function of the U^* probability that the anoxic situation will take away a person's $v^*=1$ life. Note further that the W^* amount of money one would pay for

air to breathe in such a suffocating situation is parallel to the Law of Supply and Demand function for the v money penalty assessing situation of Eq111, $W=Uv$, as

$$(114) \quad W^*=T^*= U^*v^*= -(-U^*v^*)$$

This tells us that when the U^* probability of death from suffocation is very high, ($U^*=.99$ being an approximate representation of that) one would pay a W^* very large amount of money for air, (assuming that such is available for purchase when you're suffocating!)

Now consider there to be a U^* probability of death from lack of air, but less than the extreme suffocation depicted above as for a person with COPD, Chronic Obstructive Pulmonary Disease. In that case, from Eq112, the E^* visceral expectation is less unpleasant than in the extreme case and, though one is willing to pay a good amount of money for relief as for oxygen in a tank to be breathed, that money would not be in the range of one's entire life savings as would be the case for a situation of extreme suffocation.

These two variant situations of a lack of air show Eqs112-114 fitting common experience very tightly as regards the T^* amount of relief felt in the resolution of the problem and the W^* amount of money one would pay for it. The equations also fit the situation where there is **no scarcity** of air, $U^*=0$. That is the normal situation for people where from Eq112 there is $E^*=0$ zero or no visceral expectation of a loss of one's $v^*=1$ life and, hence, no unpleasant feeling and where from Eq114, the cash value of air is zero, $W^*=0$.

Of course, (as was already pointed out above parenthetically), there is no exact measure of the U^* probability of losing one's v^* life in the above anoxic scenarios other than the $U^*=0$ value in the normal, plenty of air available, situation. Nor is the W^* amount of money one is willing to pay exactly specified in the two $U^*>0$ cases. However, the relationship between the approximate value of the amount of threat to life specified in U^* , the amount of displeasure from anoxia as a function of U^* in Eq112, the degree of T^* relief upon resolution of the problem with a provision of air and the W^* fair price of that relief in Eq114 is striking both in terms of its derivation from parallel functions for the v money Lucky Numbers

penalty game whose variables **do** have exact measure and in terms of its tight fit to the general emotional experience of people in these situations. The fact that we can derive the emotions associated with suffocation including the displeasure it causes, the relief in escaping these situations that comes about and a reasonable measure of the amount of money one would be willing to pay for relief is a remarkable validation of Eqs112-114 and the overall Lucky Numbers analysis that is underpinned by the T=R-E Law of emotion of Eq10.

Lack of air is not the only situation that can threaten a person's $v^*=1$ life. Temperature too hot or too cold is also a significant threat. Physiological temperature regulation as the avoidance of extremes of cold and of heat is, like breathing, centrally important for avoiding the loss of one's $v^*=1$ life. Temperature below 68°F puts the heat needed by the body in short supply, makes it scarce, the uncertainty of the body getting that critical level of heat needed specifiable as $U^*>0$ in Eqs112-114. This tells us, as fits common experience, that the colder the skin temperature and, hence, the greater the U^* scarcity of heat, the greater is the $E^* = -U^*v^*$ unpleasant feeling of cold, the greater the $W^*=T^*=U^*v^* = -(-U^*v^*)$ amount of money one is willing to pay to get warm and the greater the $T^*=U^*v^* = -(-U^*v^*)$ visceral transition emotion of pleasurable warmth felt as what we commonly call "relief" from the cold.

Note that the $E^* = -U^*v^*$ unpleasant sensation of cold that people feel from low temperature is not the same as the feeling of fear felt in the $E = -Uv$ fearful expectation of losing money in Eq16, but it has the same effect as fear in making one want to **avoid** the cold much as fear of losing money makes you want to avoid that outcome, in our illustration by rolling a lucky number. Note also that the range of the displeasure of cold extends at the high end to truly freezing cold that we would represent as having a $U^*=.99$ value both as a measure of the scarcity of heat and also as the probability of your losing your $v^*=1$ life. Also by understanding the W^* money one would spend to get warm when one is cold to be proportional to the time spent to making the money needed, Eq114 also tells us as fits common experience that a person is willing to spend time to get warm as by gathering and chopping wood to burn in a fireplace.

Further, it is also common experience that when a person's surroundings are above 68°F as fits $E^* = -U^*v^* = 0$ from Eq112, there is $U^* = 0$ scarcity of heat as specifies no unpleasant feeling of cold, $T^* = U^*v^* = 0$ from Eq113 and no pleasant feeling of warmth when you're not cold to begin with along with $W^* = T^* = U^*v^* = -(-U^*v^*) = 0$ from Eq114 as specifies the unwillingness of people to pay anything for heat when they aren't cold to begin with.

Other survival behaviors operate emotionally in the same way. The displeasure of excessive heat, of hunger from lack of food and of pain from trauma and disease, all of which circumstances have a U^* probability of bringing about the loss of one's $v^* = 1$ life, derive from the $E^* = -U^*v^*$ term of Eq112 with the pleasures of their resolution, respectively of relief from heat, of relief from hunger as a significant part of the pleasures of eating and of relief from pain obtainable from $T^* = U^*v^* = -(-U^*v^*)$ of Eq113 and with the amount of money willing to be paid to alleviate the displeasures of these survival threats deriving from $W^* = T^* = U^*v^* = -(-U^*v^*)$ of Eq114.

Now we want to point out how the systems for the breathing of air and the obtaining of warmth we have considered in some detail are homeostatic in being mediated in an automatic way through the visceral emotions. Recall the error function in the thermostatic heating system of Eq23.

$$(23) \quad \varepsilon = \theta_s - \theta$$

Let us review what it says. In the above, θ is the room temperature, assumed to be cold, and θ_s is the "set point" temperature set on the thermostat that you want the room to heat up to. The presence of a difference between the two, $(\theta_s - \theta) > 0$ as the ε (epsilon) error in the system automatically turns on the furnace to heat the room up until the θ room temperature reaches the θ_s set point, $\theta = \theta_s$, at which point the error is eliminated, $\varepsilon = 0$, and the furnace shuts off automatically. That is the essence of negative feedback control or cybernetic control, the elimination of error by appropriate automatic mechanisms.

And that's how the emotions for the air needed for breathing and the heat needed for optimal body temperature operate. The set point where the system is

configured to go is to the $U^*=0$ possibility of losing one's $v^*=1$ life as an $E^*=-U^*v^*=0$ zero expectation of it. The situation from lack of air or heat is threatening to one's survival lies at an $E^*=-U^*v^*$ point with a $U^*>0$ probability of your losing your $v^*=1$ life. The error function in both cases is

$$(115) \quad \varepsilon = 0 - (-U^*v^*)$$

This emotion facilitated system is turned on whenever the ε error is greater than zero. It turns on in survival situations when the amount of air or of heat available is less than adequate and $-U^*v^*>0$, that is when the ε error in Eq115 is greater than zero as manifest in the feeling of the unpleasant sensations respectively of panic fear from suffocation or of feeling cold. This ε error as displeasure motivates the person to act so as to alleviate the displeasure of panic fear suffocation or cold to bring on respectively pleasures of relief from suffocation or from cold as the feeling of warmth, which shuts the system off when the alleviating actions bring about a zero probability, $U^*=0$, of the loss of one's $v^*=1$ life. This clearly shows the displeasure felt in these and related survival situations as the neural signal of the presence of an error in this control system that is to be remedied by behavior directed to eliminate or alleviate the displeasure, which concomitantly eliminates the error.

It also tells us that our emotional machinery operates on the Law of Supply and Demand of Eq113, $W^*=T^*=U^*v^*=-(-U^*v^*)$, which derives from the $T=R-E$ Law of Emotion as a special form of it to make clear that it is also a negative feedback control system. And as a system that operates via the homeostasis that all biophysical systems operate on, our emotional machinery understood in this way is clearly in synch with accepted biological science, both in terms of the Law of Emotion and of the primitive Law of Supply and Demand we derived from it. The three survival behavior systems we'll consider next, avoiding excessive heat, hunger and pain are also governed by this primitive Law of Supply and Demand and are homeostatic systems.

Temperature regulation also demands that body surface temperature be less than 83°F . Above that we may talk about a scarcity of the coolness that the body needs to operate optimally at or a $U^*>0$ with the $E^*=-U^*v^*>0$ displeasure manifest as

feeling hot and with its pleasurable alleviation of it by appropriate cooling felt as a relief from the heat whose pleasure is measured by $T^* = -(-U^*v^*) = U^*v^* > 0$ of Eq113. This also fits the universal experience of a person being willing to pay money for air conditioning for staying cool, $W^* = T^* = U^*v^* > 0$. The absence of any pleasant feeling of relief from heat when one is continuously cooled below 83°F is also specified by Eq113 with $U^* = 0$, as fits universal experience.

Obtaining the food needed to keep an individual from losing his or her $v^* = 1$ life also follows Eq112, but not in as simple and direct a manner as with breathing and temperature regulation because of the complicating factor of the intermediate storage of the food in various organs of the body, short term in the stomach and long term in fat and in the liver. We dodge those complicating factors in the problem by ignoring or minimizing the effect of food storage on the emotions involved in eating, for we are only interested in understanding it in the simplest way of its generating the displeasure of lacking food as hunger and the pleasures of eating including experiencing the delicious taste of food. That said, we will consider that when one hasn't eaten for some time, the glucose or blood sugar in the blood vessels of the body becomes scarce or in short supply for the body's cells, $U^* > 0$. Then the emotion of feeling hungry arises as $E^* = -U^*v^* > 0$ of Eq113 or when $U^* > 0$ is small, as the disquieting nudge of appetite. This $-U^*v^*$ feeling of being hungry, quite unpleasant when in high intensity, is negated or relieved to the $T^* = -(-U^*v^*) = U^*v^*$ pleasure of eating that includes both the deliciousness of food taste and the relief felt in eliminating hunger.

The $T^* = -(-U^*v^*) = U^*v^*$ equivalence in Eq113 suggests that the intensity of the pleasure of eating, $T^* = U^*v^*$, is greater, the greater the antecedent $-U^*v^*$ hunger. This is readily validated by those who have had genuine hunger and experienced marked pleasure in eating to relieve the hunger even with eating just a piece of stale bread or cracker, which tastes very delicious under that circumstance. Almost all of us have experienced the fact that feeling hungry before eating makes the food taste better as fits Eq113. And Eq114 tells us that people are willing to spend W^* dollars to obtain food and also to spend the time necessary to achieve that goal whether the time spent is to earn the money needed to purchase food or, for our primitive hunter-gatherer ancestors who

gathered plants and hunted animals, the time is spent to obtain food in a direct manner.

When blood sugar levels are high and the stomach full, $U^*=0$, that is, there is no scarcity of food chemicals for the body's cells and under normal circumstances, hence, no feeling to eat, $-U^*v^*=0$. Under these circumstances, eating food pretty much lacks the $T^*=U^*v^*>0$ pleasure produced when one does have a $-U^*v^*>0$ appetite. In such a state, absent the abnormal, constantly present hunger that is pathologically responsible for modern man's epidemic obesity, there is little pleasure or displeasure motivation to eat.

Lastly as a survival behavior we want to consider physical trauma like a fracture that causes pain. Pain is signified as $-U^*v^*$ with $U^*>0$ as the uncertainty or scarcity or lack of a healthy condition, which is a threat to, is a probability of, losing one's $v^*=1$ life. In this way pain exists in parallel to the unpleasant emotions associated with a scarcity of air, warmth or food, all unhealthy circumstances that threaten the loss of one's $v^*=1$ life. Behavior that eliminates or negates the $E^*=-U^*v^*$ pain as with not putting mechanical pressure on a fracture as $-(-U^*v^*)=U^*v^*>0$ produces $U^*v^*>0$ relief from the pain, which is felt as pleasant relief in an intensity in proportion to the antecedent pain.

Next let us make it clear that the unpleasant emotions of suffocation, hunger, cold, excessive heat and physical trauma and the respective pleasant emotions of their alleviation, all of which derive from $W^*=T^*=U^*v^*=-(-U^*v^*)$ of Eq113, **are different** from the operational emotions of the behaviors used to get the commodities needed to satisfy those visceral survival needs when those commodities are not immediately available. When one is hungry, for example, eating may proceed in a very direct fashion when food is readily available, as when a roast beef sandwich is there in the refrigerator to satisfy the $E^*=-U^*v^*$ hunger of a hungry person who just woke up after being passed out for two days from a drinking binge. But one must possess food first before one can eat it. Explaining the relationship between the operational emotions associated with getting food to the emotions that motivate our eating it is best done with an example of food procurement that is mathematically as well-defined as playing a

Lucky Numbers dice game where food is the prize for the rolling of a lucky number by a hungry player.

We assume that eating this food prize alleviates a hunger of $E^* = -U^*v^*$ of Eq112 to produce the eating pleasure of $T^* = -(-U^*v^*) = U^*v^*$. This mode of behavior of rolling dice to get food has, in the standard Lucky Numbers game, a $Z=1/3$ probability of success and an improbability of $U=1-Z=2/3$. One's expectation in this game is not the $E=ZV$ expectation of getting a prize of V dollars but rather of getting a prize of the $W^*=T^*=U^*v^*$ pleasure of eating the food. Because this T^* pleasant emotion attained has an explicit dollar value in the W^* of $W^*=T^*=W^*v^*$ of Eq114, we can substitute $W^*=U^*v^*$ for the V dollar term in $E=ZV$ to obtain the expectation or hope of pleasure in getting the food prize as

$$(116) \quad E=ZV=ZU^*v^*=U^*v^*-UU^*v^*$$

This E expectation as the hope of obtaining $T^*=U^*v^*$ food pleasure to probability Z that is nominally worth $W^*=T^*$ dollars stands in comparison to $E=ZV=V-UV$ for the expectation or hope of getting V dollars. In the latter case the pleasurable desire is for V dollars while in the former case of Eq210 the desire is for U^*v^* food pleasure. Then much as the pleasant desire for V dollars is reduced by the $-UV$ meaningful uncertainty or anxiousness or anxiety about obtaining the money to one's uncertainty tempered hopes of $E=ZV$, so is the U^*v^* pleasant thought of eating the food reduced by $-UU^*v^*$ meaningful uncertainty in getting the food to the uncertainty tempered expectation of ZU^*v^* where Z is the probability of success in obtaining the food by some particular route, be it rolling dice or whatever. This latter term of ZU^*v^* is the intensity of pleasure felt in one's hopes of satisfying one's hunger by a particular behavior of getting food, in this example by playing the dice game to get food to eat. And this is exactly how the mind works in seeking pleasure by a particular behavior characterized by some Z probability of success in achieving that pleasure. It should be obvious from this that the pleasure of expectation is greater for routes to obtaining the food that have the higher Z probability of success, which is a primary determinant in a person's deciding the "best" way to get food.

We can also develop the transition emotion felt when one rolls a lucky number to get the food. From the Eq10 Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$, what is realized following a successful throw of the dice is the $R=U^*v^*$ pleasure of eating the food obtained as the prize of the game. But because there is U uncertainty in getting the food, there is an additional pleasure in the thrill or excitement in getting food to eat under a condition of uncertainty.

$$(117) \quad T^*=R-E^*= U^*v^* - (U^*v^*-UU^*v^*) = -(-UU^*v^*)=UU^*v^*$$

When there is no uncertainty, $U=0$, in getting the food as in reaching into the refrigerator to pull out a ham sandwich, there is no excitement involved in the act of getting the food one needs to eat. Contrasting this to a hunt for food or a search for berries to eat for people who have no store food makes it easy to see that upon making the kill for meat or finding a berry bush, there is great excitement, the excitement implied in $T=Uv$. In that sense, the UU^* term in UU^*v^* in Eq117 is a compound improbability consisting of the U^* improbability of your body's cells getting what they need in food chemicals because your blood stream is low on blood sugar and the U uncertainty or improbability of your getting food to eat via some particular behavior.

The $T=UU^*v^*$ excitement in getting the food, hence, is a function of the $U=2/3$ uncertainty in getting the food and of the $T^*=U^*v^*$ pleasure in eating the food, itself a function of the $-U^*v^*$ antecedent hunger via $T^*=U^*v^*= -(-U^*v^*)$ of Eq117. One, then, gets both the $R=U^*V^*$ pleasure of eating the food and the $T=UU^*v^*$ thrill of obtaining it under uncertainty, which is what our hunter gatherer ancestors felt when searching for vegetative food or hunting for animal food with uncertainty, U . One can picture such a group having an exciting feast following a successful hunt or search. In contrast if there is no U uncertainty in getting food, from $T=UU^*v^*=0$, there is no excitement or thrill in getting the food despite the $R^*=U^*v^*$ pleasure in eating it, much as when one needs but to open the door of one's refrigerator to grab a ham sandwich or an apple to eat if one is hungry.

Consider, too, in the food prize Lucky Numbers dice game the disappointment felt when one is not successful, assuming the game can be played only one time, and

food is not obtained, the toss of the dice a failure, under a condition of $-U^*v^*$ hunger. In that case with $E^*=ZU^*v^*$ and $R=0$ for no prize realized, from the Law of Emotion, $T=R-E$,

$$(118) \quad T^*=R-E^*= 0-ZU^*v^*= -ZU^*v^*$$

This tells us that beyond the factor of one's Z confidence in getting the food, the more $-U^*v^*$ hungry you are and the more U^*v^* pleasure you expected from getting the food, the greater is the disappointment you feel as measured by $T= -ZU^*v^*$ in failing to get the food, which fits universal experience.

With respect to pain that arises as a battle wound of some kind as specified by $-U^*v^*$, a feeling of fear of losing one's life arises as the $-UU^*v^*$ function in Eq211 with U as the probability of failing to save one's $v^*=1$ life. Success in the effort to defend oneself thus comes about emotionally as $-(-UU^*v^*)=UU^*v^*$, which is experienced both as relief and as the thrill of victory. Dismay from failure to defend oneself from an attempt on one's $v^*=1$ life takes the $T=-ZU^*v^*$ form specified in Eq118.

When the U uncertainty of resolving a $-U^*v^*$ visceral need by some behavior is initially very high and as such "difficult" to attain, the mind searches in its memory file for alternative behaviors that decrease the U uncertainty in the $-UU^*v^*$ term of Eq117. For example, when hunger and its displeasures are great with U^* accordingly high in $-UU^*v^*$, but U , the uncertainty of obtaining food to resolve the hunger, also high, the individual searches in mind for some way, some new route that lowers the U uncertainty of getting food in the $-UU^*v^*$ function.

In non-mathematical language, this has a hungry person asking himself: "How am I going to get the food I am starving for?" When the light bulb turns on to point to a "good" way, a high Z probability way, to get the food, the $U=(1-Z)$ uncertainty decreases and the ZU^*v^* expectation of getting the food by that newfound path increases in magnitude and in pleasure. At this point, this new path come upon by thought is taken because the pleasure associated with it in expectation of success is greater than the original path considered.

This section's approach to explaining our elemental visceral behavior was derived mathematically from the earlier economic perspective. That is, what we feel and do to save and generate life was logically developed from what we feel and do to save and generate money. While this approach has been illuminating, in biophysical reality the visceral feelings came about first from biological evolution and the economic ones long after for man via cultural evolution.

Let's talk about ***mixed emotions*** now. Feeling a mix of pleasure and displeasure or having mixed emotions is most easy to illustrate in economic matters with a form of the Lucky Numbers game that awards a prize of V dollars when a lucky number is rolled on the dice to some probability, Z , and assesses a penalty of v dollars if a lucky number fails to be rolled to probability $U=1-Z$. The expectation for this game in which a prize is awarded if you win and a penalty incurred if you lose is

$$(119) \quad E = Zv - Uv$$

Nothing complicated here. The mixed emotion expectation of $E = Zv - Uv$ works in a simple and direct way. If $ZV > Uv$ and the expectation is, hence, overall positive, $E > 0$, the pleasure of hopeful expectation dominates to parallel the hard fact that on average money is more likely to be gained by the behavior than lost. The gamble, as such, is a "good" one and the game is played. And if $ZV < Uv$ and the overall expectation, hence, negative, $E < 0$, the displeasure of the fear of losing dominates to parallel the hard fact that on average money is more likely to be lost than gained. The gamble now is a "bad" and avoided if at all possible. This strategy is recognizable as being determined by simple cost-benefit analysis. If the cost and risks are outweighed by the benefits, do it; if not, don't do it.

Such a cost-benefit response to a circumstance that has mixed emotions extends to the visceral emotions considered in Section 6. The governing function when money is not part of the cost-benefit equation is

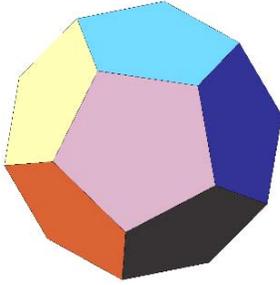
$$(120) \quad E^* = Z^*V^* - U^*v^*$$

The Z^*V^* term represents the expectation of a gaining of a life, $V^*=1$, as by sexual reproduction. This is, as we all know, powerfully associated with the pleasures of sex and love. The $-U^*v^*$ term was seen in the last section to be broadly associated with unpleasant feelings that risk loss of life like hunger and cold. Admixed with the Z^*V^* term as relates to reproductive behavior, the $-U^*v^*$ term

in Eq120 represents the risks and costs of romantic love. While we had little problem understanding $-U^*v^*$ and its resolution by successful survival behavior to U^*v^* pleasure when it applies to visceral emotions and behaviors that are basically inborn or instinctive like eating motivated by hunger and warming behavior motivated by feeling chilly or freezing, explaining reproductive/sexual feelings and behavior with the same terms can be problematic because it is greatly affected by cultural restrictions. Indeed, feeling the threat of punishment for breaking sexual rules that restrict instinctive sexual behaviors and counter the pleasant emotions that motivate them is readily understood as a $-U^*v^*$ fear of violating such sexual restrictions.

Perfectly sensible sexual behavior by the male from the perspective of evolutionary optimization driven by feelings of pleasure, as shall be considered in depth in the following section, may be considered utterly contemptible in civilized societies. And what the average reproductive emotional response to a female is for a human male can be very clouded by the partial psychological castration or “trimming” of the sexual drive in modern man. While that phrase may seem excessive and even insulting, Christianity, in a very patent way in Catholicism, deems sexual thoughts and their feelings, which readily fall into the category of instinctively aroused Z^*V^* expectations of sexual success, to deserve the fearsome $-U^*v^*$ threat of the pain of eternal hell fire. And rape, which physiologically produces a V^* new life as likely and as often as consensual sex, abortion for such an unwanted pregnancy notwithstanding, carries a $-U^*v^*$ painful penalty of ten years or so in prison.

Clearly, the “good” things that can come from sex for the male, the propagation of one’s genetic information, have dense association as Eq120 with the “bad” things that can come about from a broad spectrum of punishments for it in civilized society, the details of these mixed emotion sexual situations able to be understood only by taking a deep look at the underlying evolutionary fitness inputs, to be taken up in the next section, and the restrictive cultural inputs we’ll look at after that in a later section.



11. Diversity, Significance & Cognitive Selection

We said much about natural selection a few sections back and now want to consider how our mental or cognitive selection of what to think and what to do works. Mathematically it starts for us with the fellow pictured below.



Edward Hugh Simpson

Shortly after WWII, Simpson developed a function for diversity called *Simpson's Reciprocal Diversity Index*.

$$(121) \quad D = 1/\sum p_i^2 \quad ; \quad i=1,2,\dots,N$$

The meaning of the p_i term in his formula is made clear by considering it as a property of a set of things. For example, the (■■■■, ■■■■, ■■■■, ■■■■) set is one of

To get a good sense of what this $D=2.194$ diversity index of (■■■■■■■■■■■, ■■■■■■■■■■, ■), (10, 10, 1) means, let's compare its diversity index to that of the $K=21$ object, (■■■■■■■, ■■■■■■■■, ■■■■■■■■), (7, 7, 7) balanced set whose diversity index is from Eq125, $D=N=3$. By comparing it to the $K=21$ object, $N=3$ subset, (10, 10, 1) set with $D=2.194$ in Eq126, we see that we can understand the D diversity measure as the $N=3$ number of diverse subsets in the set **reduced** by the amount of **imbalance in** the set.

To reinforce this sense of the D diversity index, let's look at a third $K=21$ object, $N=3$ subset set, (■■■■■■■, ■■■■■■■■, ■■■■■■■■), (6, 6, 9). It has weight fractions of $p_1=6/21$, $p_2=6/21$ and $p_3=9/21$ and a diversity index from Eq121 of $D=2.882$. This tells us that the (6, 6, 9) set has a diversity of $N=3$ reduced by the amount of imbalance in the set. But (6, 6, 9) is reduced from the $N=3$ value **less than** the (10, 10, 1) set is reduced from $N=3$ with its $D=2.194$ because there is less imbalance in the (6, 6, 9) set than in the (10, 10, 1) set.

This can be demonstrated with complete precision using statistics functions, which is readily done, but for now our intuitive sense of imbalance is sufficient to show the broad rule that the D diversity index of a set of K objects and N subsets is the set's N number of subsets reduced by the amount of imbalance in the set.

That is all well and good. But how does the D diversity index give a clear sense of how the mind works to select things? We will show that next by first demonstrating that the D diversity index is an excellent measure of how things are subconsciously sensed by the mind to be **significant** on the basis of their size or amount.

Significance is important concept for understanding the machinery of the mind because we have a powerful bent to **disregard the insignificant in size** in our considerations, not just in our perceptions, but also in our thoughts, in our conversations and in how we behave. And such disregarding of the insignificant is one form of selection given that what is disregarded is **selected against** or not selected, much as in natural selection the population with the smaller g growth rate, as with the one in red in Figure 96, is selected against and dies out or is disregarded by nature.

The mind's sense of what is significant versus insignificant is important to understand not just from the perspective of basic science but also because it is a

central factor in propaganda, as we shall see, that can influence our behaviors in ways that may not be in our interest.

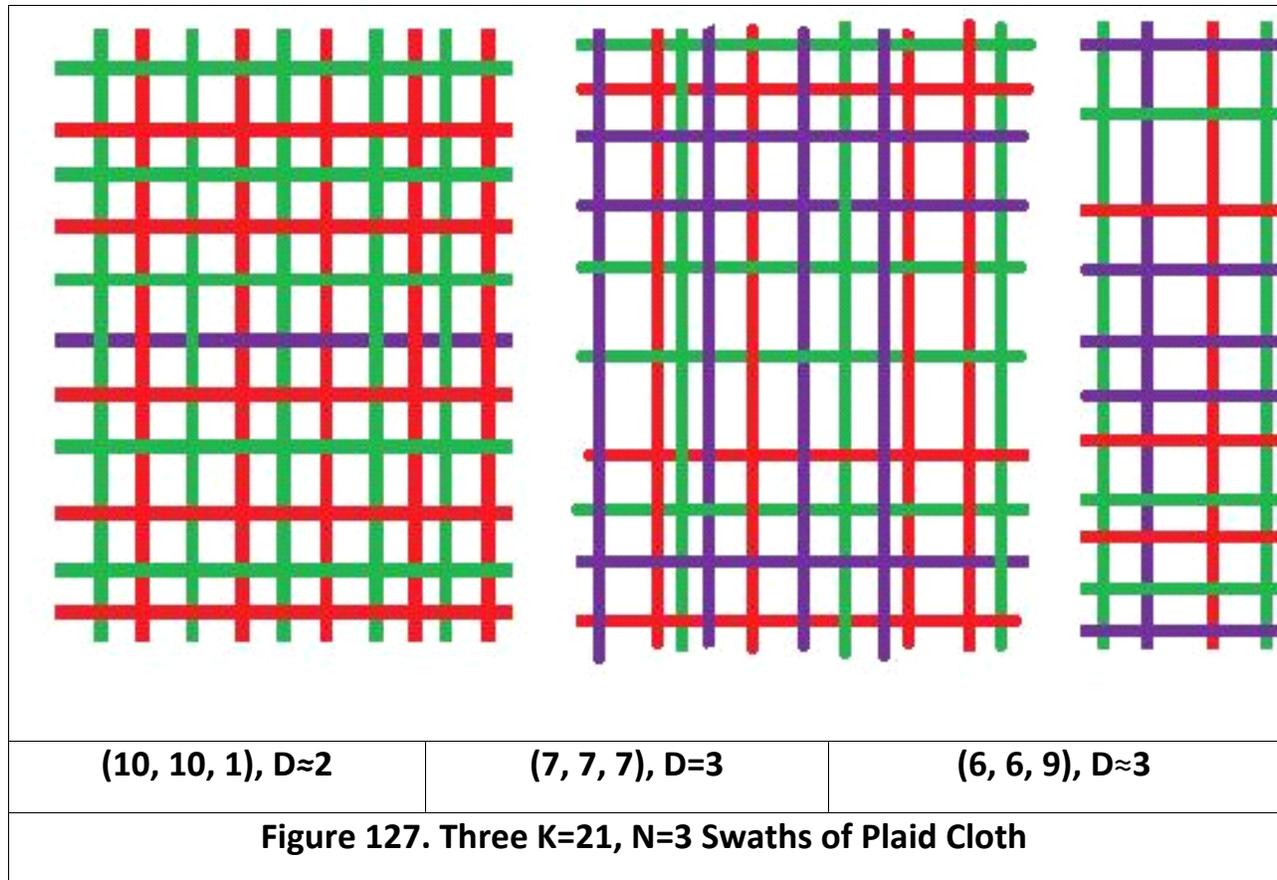
Back to the mathematics of it, the D diversity index is understandable as the **number of significant subsets in a set**. Explaining D as such starts with the observation that the $x_1=1$ purple subset in the (, , ), (10, 10, 1) set is quantitatively small and, hence, insignificant relative to the $x_2=x_3=10$ object red and green subsets. That implies that there are but 2 significant subsets in the (10, 10, 1) set as is reflected in the rounded off value of its $D=2.194$ diversity index of $D\approx 2$, which also tells us, given $N=3$ subsets in the set, that there is 1 insignificant subset in (10, 10, 1), the $x_3=1$ purple object subset, as fits our intuition.

In contrast, rounding off the $D=2.882$ of the (, , ), (6, 6, 9) set to $D\approx 3$ as connotes 3 significant subsets fits our intuition that all 3 subsets in (6, 6, 9) have an approximately near equal number of objects in them and all are significant from that perspective. And intuition has no problem at all seeing that all $N=3$ subsets of the balanced (, , ), (7, 7, 7) are significant relative to each other given that they are all equal in size.

The argument could yet be advanced, however, that significance is still too vague a concept to say about it that the D diversity index is a good measure of it. Distinguishing the significant from the insignificant is so centrally important to understanding how the human mind works, though, that we want to argue this point further. We will do that here by considering the root meaning of the word, **significant**.

In that regard, let us point out that the Latin roots of the word, significance, are *signum*, meaning sign or word and *facio*, meaning to produce or to make. This suggests us that what is significant is what we bother to make a word for or give a word to. Conversely, what is insignificant is not given a word to.

We can demonstrate the reasonableness of this proposition in a clear way by manifesting the three $K=21$, $N=3$ object sets we've been talking about as swaths of plaid cloth that have relative amounts of colored threads in them specified by the p_i weight fractions of our three example sets.



A woman who owns a plaid skirt with the $(10, 10, 1), D \approx 2$, pattern on the left as I, Ruth, happen to, would spontaneously describe it as a **red and green plaid** skirt, disregarding and omitting verbal reference to the low density, insignificant threads of purple in the plaid. She would make this description of the plaid automatically without conscious calculation or consideration of the thread densities because the mind just does subconsciously and automatically disregard the insignificant in size or amount all else being equal. The mind operates in this way cognitively not only in its visually disregarding or not noticing what is insignificant in size or amount, but also in not verbalizing or giving a word to what is intuitively sensed as insignificant as fits the linguistic criterion given above for what is significant. Our disregarding the insignificant is also manifest in disregarding the insignificant purple threads in the $D \approx 2$ plaid swath in our **behavior**. For if I want to buy another plaid skirt that “looks like” the $D \approx 2$ plaid in Figure 133, I am quite happy to disregard the insignificant purple element altogether and just buy an all red and green plaid skirt.

It should be made totally clear if it has been missed by the reader from everything we have said that the significance we are talking about here derives from the relative size of a subset in a set as the amount of objects in a subset relative to the other subsets in the set. Of course, though, the mind's sense of the significance of an object depends on more than just its magnitude as with a peach having greater significance for a person, especially a hungry one, than a rock of the same size as the peach, but that does not alter the fact that we don't pay much or any attention to things that are very small in size or amount.

The significance of something that derives from its magnitude or size is not just a characteristic of **objects** but also of the magnitude or frequency of **events** that happen repeatedly over time. This includes not only ideas expressed in a conversation from one person to another but also ideas broadcast in the media. For when the broadcast of an opinion on an issue is frequent, that causes the listening audience automatically or subconsciously to consider it significant and to select or retain the idea or opinion and potentially consider it to have value and importance potentially for further considered rather than disregarding it. The repeated screeching of "Witch Hunt!" by Donald Trump and his mouthpieces is a good example of this.

On the flip side, the extended absence of the media airing an idea makes it seem insignificant to the audience and as such not regarded or thought about or talked about or likely to be acted on. One example of this is global warming, which is seldom mentioned in news stories about the current crop of forest fires that have killed so many people and destroyed so much property. Another prime hiding of a significant fact is of the wealthy people, on the one hand, and the courts and police, on the other, collectively "the ruling class", controlling the country and most of the people in it, which makes this central fact of life in America seem insignificant. And associated with that is the abuse and humiliation inherent in most jobs. All this is easy to do for the corporations and businesses that control the lives of their workers, often in abusive ways, are the same folks who constitute the ruling class and who own the media. Not even the so called progressive news outlets like MSNBC broadcast the obvious that the rich control near everything and everybody in the country including the politicians and the elections that make America out to be a "land of freedom." And though there is little difference between controlling people and enslaving them, the corporation controlled media never suggests that life in America might be naught but a modern form of slavery from which derives a goodly part of misery that

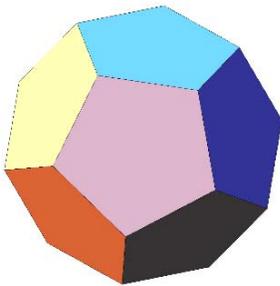
Americans endure as they become nine to five adult workers. The message here is not whether these sociopolitical interpretations of life in America are correct or not, but rather that the issues raised here are just about NEVER raised in our “free press.”

Indeed, there are two forms of de facto censorship inherent in modern propaganda. The first is of killing ideas not in the interest of the ruling class by just not talking about them and making them insignificant. And the second line of what might be called systematic truth destruction is to moralize actions so as to make what is good for the ruling class sound good for everybody and what would be good for the little guy, like rebellion against the control and abuse poured down on them up to and including revolution, seem and sound bad. While the latter propaganda tactic is power also, the first line of mind control and the behavior control it induces is making the significant seem insignificant and the significant in people’s lives seem insignificant.

If this accusation of all the “nice and caring” people up the top possibly being abusive bastards seems excessive, consider two surveys from the *Family Feud* TV program leaking out some of the generally untouchable issues. A question was: Which person makes life for you worse than it should be? The #1 answer was The Boss. Another question was: What percentage of men do women think are jerks? The #1 answer was: 75%, while the answer given by the woman contestant asked the question was 100%. The connection between the two, if we may introduce our own opinion later considered in depth with precise mathematical argument, abuse by the boss significantly dilutes the vigor of men and, hence, their appeal and attractiveness to women. Instead we have on TV Trump the fun-loving bastard boss shouting “You’re fired!” to make it seem not only just, but also kind of fun instead of the horror it presents. You might hear a reply on that issue of “That’s just life.” But it doesn’t have to be that way for in France, as an example that could be followed, a person **cannot** be fired without an employer going to court on the issue and a court judge issuing the final judgment on whether or not the firing of that person is legal. This piece of true democracy in action has never been mentioned in the American media, though every Frenchman is as aware of it as tomorrow’s forecast on the weather.

Note also that the substitution of insignificance for realistic significance by frequent repetition is the basis for the talking points strategy used so commonly not just by the Trump people, but also the Republican Party arm of the ruling class generally in order to give significance often to ridiculously impossible notions,

which when broadcast again and again, come to seem significant as reasonable opinions for people to consider. The benefit to the nation of the recent tax bill that gives the preponderant bulk of benefits to the rich at the top of our social hierarchy is one case in point. Hopefully our having spent this many words on significance with D diversity mathematics will have the desired effect of making the thought control issue seem significant enough to people to think and talk about it with an eye to developing a solution to it, something we will get into firmly and in depth in the later sections of this presentation.



12. Anticipatory Excitement

We earlier spoke at length about the excitement or the thrill, UV , that arises from success in achieving a goal under – UV uncertainty. Now let's examine the excitement felt *prior* to acting to achieve a goal.

Carefully examining one's expectation, $E=ZV$, tells us that ZV is a forecast, a prediction that one will obtain or realize $R=V$ dollars to some probability Z . That prediction includes as an experience not only the thought of getting the V dollars, but also an anticipation of the pleasure of delight in getting the money that is also embodied in the $R=V$ function.

Our minds also automatically project and anticipate the $T=UV$ excitement or thrill of success in getting the money to probability Z . Hence, in parallel to the anticipation of getting V dollars to some probability, Z , as ZV we understand our projection to experiencing a UV excitement to that same probability of success, Z , as ZUV .

Success is not the only possible outcome that can be realized in making an attempt to obtain V dollars. Failure and along with that the experiencing of -ZV disappointment is also a possibility and that to the probability of failure, which is the U uncertainty measure. That aspect of emotional expectation is metaphorically speaking the "flip side" of the ZUV anticipatory excitement as anticipated disappointment from failure to a U probability as U(-ZV) or -UZV.

Our mental machinery tends to pull up both emotional anticipations simultaneously as

$$(128) \quad EE = ZUV - UZV$$

Hence our total emotional expectation of possible outcomes is an anticipation not only of the payoff being obtained as ZV, our hopes in the matter, and of failure to get it as our -UV anxiety about achieving success, but also of our anticipation of the T transition emotions, of T=UV excitement to probability, Z, as ZUV, and of the anticipation of the transition emotion of disappointment, -ZV, upon failure to probability, U, as U(-ZV)= -UZV.

Hence, the total packet of expectation has two distinguishable components. One of them, E, is from Eq12 of our hopes, ZV, and our anxiety, -UV, as

$$(12) \quad E=ZV = V - UV$$

And the other component, EE, is of the possible T transition emotions that may be experienced that includes our anticipatory excitement, ZUV, and our apprehension of the disappointment we might feel, U(-ZV)=-UZV. We can write the full packet of expectation that includes both Components, E and EE, as

$$(129) \quad E + EE = (ZV = V - UV) + ZUV - UZV$$

The ramifications of this expansion of expectation as E+EE are noteworthy. Looking at ZUV by itself, we see that it is a very small number that tends to zero, (0), when the probability of success, Z, is large, which makes the U probability of failure small. For example, while the ZUV function for Z=U=.5 is ZUV=.25V, the function for Z=.95 and U=.05 is very small at ZUV=.0475, a vanishingly small

measure that indicates a very low intensity emotion whose quantitative insignificance tends to have us disregard it.

This disregarding of it takes the form of not thinking about it or considering it, holding it in thought, anymore. This is evident in a situation where we are acting towards a goal we are strongly sure we will succeed at. We don't worry about the outcome, don't think about it any more. We just do it to achieve the goal and collect its payoff.

A similarly small value for ZUV also comes about when the probability of success is very small. If $Z=.01$ then $U=.99$, then $ZUV=.0099V$, which is small enough again to be insignificant and as such disregarded or subconsciously and automatically tossed out of mind, the colloquial reasoning being that it is a "pie in the sky" possibility that has so slight a likelihood of realization, that it is dismissed out of hand. That is, when a goal has an extremely low possible of success, you discard the thought of acting to get it.

The most exciting situations in anticipation of success, hence, are those that have a 50/50 chance of success, $Z=U=.5$. These are the ones that are both a challenge, but not so unlikely to succeed that they are discarded promptly without further thought. The fit of this mathematical function, ZUV , to how the human mind works in actuality is dramatic in our view.

Note further, now, that significant anticipatory excitement as occurs at or near the $Z=U=.5$ level, also brings with it the significant anticipation of the possibility of failure and disappointment in $-UZV$, for the two functions $ZUV - UZV$ occur together, we posit from introspection, as a zero sum pairing. This implies as fits emotional experience that what we feel anticipatory excitement over, we also worry over as the U anticipation of $T = -ZV$ or $-UZV$.

This makes sense out of the EE anticipation of T transition emotions in terms of their purpose for the presence of a significant $-UZV$ expectation of disappointment motivates further thought to locate a way of getting the V dollar prize with a higher Z probability of success, which once it is come upon makes EE

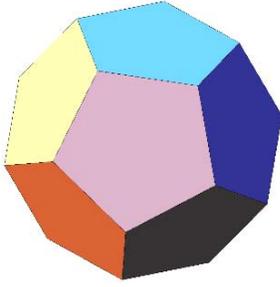
small enough to be discarded, the mind being at that point "satisfied" with a good probability of success not to think or worry about the problem anymore.

This is what life for primitive man, our hunter-gatherer forebearers, had to be all about. For them, successful hunting was a "crap shoot," very exciting on the one hand and yet worrisome enough as a projection to potential disappointment upon failure to generate great focus in the mind on what to do to achieve success.

Novelty has this same effect of generating anticipatory excitement because of the possible usefulness of a new object or situation, whose probability for a formerly unseen item is intuitively taken a priori to be more or less 50/50 and hence with a maximum EE that stimulates anticipatory excitement and the thought of disappointment upon failure.

That is the reason why people tend to always be somewhat excited or stimulated by novelty and to pay attention to what is new and explore it further in order to see if it may have utility and value.

Because of this, novelty is a primary factor in pitching propaganda to people by packaging deception in novel enough forms to make the deceitful message be exciting or stimulating and be paid attention to. And the best, the most successful, propaganda messages are repeated enough to make them significant from the perspective of significance we talked about in the last section. That's quite exactly what you see on TV and such with the same deceitful message of a benevolent ruling class repeated again and again, they along with their faux benevolent police and ministers and corporate managers/bosses of the working class. But with variation in the delivery of the message to keep it exciting and stimulating enough for the message to be paid attention to. Obviously the content of the messages in propagandistic TV programming remaining the same from week to week, benevolent, brave police and equal abundant opportunity for all, but the form of its delivery, new dramatic plots in the script every week, to make the hotwash be attractive enough via its novelty to be stupidly watched again and again.



13. More from Peter

I was dead at birth. My mother, the daughter of her millionaire mother, put money first as her priority, not people at all, not those on the short end including me, even as a newborn. Indeed, the story was told that I rejected her breast at birth, so cold was she, the blame for this placed by her on me. Fortunately, even with this bad start in life, no unconditional love coming from that bitch, not that atypical for upper middle class American women, I had some luck yet in being the first born of my mother who was the first born to this family's wealthy immigrant matriarch.

This witch insisted I cut off my beard, it a clear sign of youthful rebellion in those days, and I refused arousing her anger, my grandfather, no liberal himself, shouted out to me in support, "Siempre, Pietro!" (Always, Peter!), encouraging me in the strongest terms to tell this control freak harpy to go to hell. And by extension, to do the same to every power-mad jackass I would run into during my life, of which there turned out to be many.

That was part of a late sixties kick-start to a new life for me, a resurrection from the creepy grip of middle class obedience, a rising up in my spirit that was so joyful and satisfying and socially successful that once my eyes were opened to the cage they force people to live in, I'd have cut off my right arm at the shoulder rather than go back to that middle class hell on earth.

You only do life once. Really. That Heaven and Hell shit is total nonsense says this now PhD biologist. So you might as well try for the top shelf prize of real happiness in life, because, let me repeat, you only have one life to live with true freedom and its rewards being the only thing worth fighting for.

Young people not so fortunate as to have the epiphany I did to tell them what real freedom feels like, invariably turn out in adult life to be nothing but scum on a toilet bowl, even if it is sprinkled with the standard cheap perfume of the ridiculous delusions about the worth of obedient wage slaves broadcast 24/7 on TV, in the movies and from the pulpit.

And escaping the worst In this one harsh life people are given takes more than just seeing the game as it realistically is. For you must also actively resist the police state punks who run the game when the time comes in your life, which it does for all, when they tap you on the shoulder. Resist them with a good glob of your anger spit into their faces, just as I am doing with these words here.

For if you don't fight back at that critical time in your life to keep your self-love and pride, you lose your courage and any chance there is for being truly happy in life, all that matters, as we all eventually come to see. And these enemies of all of us are not just the FBI types, but the bosses at work along with the loathsome priests and ministers who break the spirits of the young in the most disgusting ways.

Worst truly and the hardest to escape and retaliate against are the mass of parents in America who act as prison wardens towards their kids to raise them as the slaves of the ruling class. As our mathematical science text, *The Human Bee Hive-*, makes unarguably clear, modern society derives its order, its organization and its collective strength only by an amputation of the independence and potential happiness of the people it controls, however that control is hidden in our culture.

You really think people are happy in America? Look at the faces of real people, those who ride the city bus and drive their cars off to work every morning. Go ahead. Take a ride on the bus and open your eyes to the truth of the sadness and hidden misery on people's faces. That tells the story, the sad, unhappy faces.

And forget the psychobabble of the psychology propagandists who put the blame for your sadness in adult life on you and on the vague ghost of mental illness

instead of on the money-mad bastards in the ruling class who own you and your labor.

Walk past the faked smiling faces of TV and movie performers. They all stink and should be spit on rather than admired. For their central function is to give a false narrative of reality that guides you to put your neck in the hangman's noose of your ruling class controllers. Their like the music makers in the stockyards who play their songs to calm the cows and pigs down enough to make them easy targets for the butchery that's coming next for them.

I managed to avoid all this all the way up to my present age of 76. All my adult life I've been a runaway slave ever running away from capitalist cannibalism. And that feels so good! Not just to run from these poisonous snakes dressed in drag, but also to think and scheme how how the parasitic rot at the top that infects us all can be cleansed from the scene.

So preaches this quite intelligent PhD mathematical scientist who's also fortunately been street strong enough to have never been beaten in a fistfight save by two cowardly U.S. Marshalls and that in a federal courthouse when I was totally wrapped in chains and couldn't possibly fight back. Such viciousness on the part of those who are paraded around on TV as heroes calls for serious retribution like tossing them all in a vat of warm dog pee.

If resistance at that level of anger sounds dangerous, it is. But the risk you must take to develop and keep true pride in yourself, young people, is not too great a cost to pay for happiness in life, for fighting back is the only way happiness can come to you, forget all the false promises shoved in your face 24/7 on TV.

The statistics say unarguably that 60% of Americans today are lonely and that means sad and unhappy and depressed in life. That's the common fate of all you obedient, ass-licking guys out there who are by ineluctable human nature just not ever going to be thought cool enough, whatever your delusions and phony act to connect with that someone to love without which life is flat and empty and a constant temptation to suicide.

They don't tell you that on TV because everything on TV is tailor made to fit the culture of lies used to get and keep people in line and going down the wrong path, especially when they're young, like a rabbit following the pieces of cheese up to the cage that will trap it and make for its easy slaughter.

This reality becomes all the more clear with a trip to lock-up, a place whose pain and terror and torture is one of the best protected secrets in the country. It tells you what life in capitalist America is really all about, though learning its lessons by experience is deadly to the spirit and happiness of most who taste it directly. Better to learn from someone who has been there and survived it and is still resistant and brave enough to call out every prison guard and cop for what they are, thugs in the employ of the ruling class.

I did three years in federal prison, accused of getting angry at an Albany, NY businessman who plays poker every week with the judges and the mayor. My crime of anger was for his scamming me out of \$70,000 in family money, mind you that we got back from him through civil law proceedings because he was dealing stock futures without a stock broker's license. If that makes no sense to you how a person can win under civil law and lose in the same matter under criminal law, welcome to justice system corruption at the lower level that is as utterly corrupt as it is at the upper level as we all see so clearly now with Trump and his phony pious Republican cronies.

This total faggot stamp and coin dealer got a slap on the wrist for unequivocally breaking the law and running off with our \$70,000 to begin with while I got three years in prison and the destruction of my family for expressing anger over his scamming us out of the money. There's no bull here. There are papers for everything I am saying.

Fuck justice in America. There is none. Not unless Bernie Sanders can pull off a miracle and take power away from King Rat Trump. [Ken, this was written while Bernie Sanders was still in the race.] Short of that miracle, and it will be a miracle if he wins in this atmosphere, no young man or woman has anything to lose in life by taking up revolution, even if at risk to his or her own life, which is worthless as far as getting any happiness out of it.

And then we should ask where Bernie should go with his plans if he does win? To meaningful change, of course, which, though, is a lot harder to bring about than just to talk about. For proposed agreements are easily trumped by the reality of power that exists between those who make those agreements.

So let's get real about what people want and how that can be achieved. The two worst things that assail mankind are both tied up with weapons. On the one hand, the biggest chunk of people's misery and unhappiness in life derives from the abusive control of bosses that is ultimately backed by laws enforced by well armed police.

None of that economic coercion and humiliation and the destruction of your happiness that comes from it can be placed on you without police power ultimately backing up capitalism's hold on you. Sure, it can be argued in an overly simplistic way that our elections make us free politically, but that doesn't take into account the influence of money on the game. For not only are we personally controlled by the boss paycheck-wise, but the money of the wealthy ruling class also near totally controls what type of people can be elected to control us by their laws passed. Get real with this. Everybody in Congress is a millionaire.

To get back to the initial point, this system of governing that kills off any chance for real freedom and happiness is ultimately backed by police empowered by their weapons. Get rid of the weapons of everybody including the police and you not get rid not only of mass-murder but also the continuously rampant police abuse that modern cell phones have made so clear.

No matter how strange it may sound when you first hear of the idea, taking away the weapons of cops gets rid of the (hidden) police state we've been living in America since the days of Andrew Jackson, the noble Founding Fathers stuff we're taught in junior high having died a long time ago. We'll explain how that can actually work in a moment, that it's not just ridiculously idealistic.

First though let's jump to the second major problem for mankind that visits us every now and then with millions of deaths and crippling, war. Worst in that

category for us sitting on the horizon now is nuclear war, of course, the seldom discussed topic in the news that will blow us all away, and very painfully.

Wars happens not only from territory and resource rivalry, but also from the internal misery of a nation's abusive control we just talked about when it's passed on to other nations in war as a way to deflect it out of the nation the misery originated in from its abusive control of its own people. It's like the boiling pot of internal aggression from abusive control getting so heated that it blows over into the external aggression of warring on people of other countries other than your own. Make note clearly that this is especially in nuclear war for the millions of little kids who are going to be painfully incinerated and radiated to death from it.

The solution to these two main problems for mankind of epidemic personal misery in life and the horrors of war is for the people of the world to rise up and risk their everything to form a one-world government. One government for everybody in the world has by its very nature no government outside of it that it can possibly engage in war with, which neatly and succinctly takes care of the war problem. And such a singular central power to govern everybody is also able to take care of the other problem, of excessive, abusive control, by banning all weapons from the hands of individuals. They would not be allowed to be used by anybody including the police in the local venues of this one-world government.

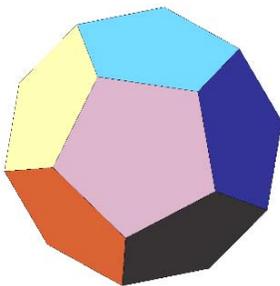
Got a gripe that for whatever reason can't be settled by mutual compromise? Then put on the gloves if fighting turns out to be the only way to settle things. For if you pick up a weapon in any of the local venues of this one-world government, the punishment is death. As bad as that sounds, it would be the only law the central government could impose on people beyond equally severe punishment for one venue crossing into another to make war on them.

Everything else, all other laws, will be under the control of the local venues with the proviso that those local laws would be enforced by police who use no weapons other than their fists. However much of too much of an adventure this may seem, it's a sure way to prevent tyranny because cops who control people only in being the physically toughest in the town are limited in the number of people they can control without weapons. That preserves the balance of power

that our revolutionary Founding Fathers recognized was so important for freedom and the successful pursuit of happiness.

If that sounds like an adventure, it is. Believe it. As raucous as it might seem, it's a heck of a lot better than the hidden concentration camps of police run prisons that currently rule over the people for the sake of the privileged ruling class. Better for a young man to die putting up a fight for a bit of real freedom and joy in life than to be castrated into the sadness and disgusting state that characterizes just about every person over 35 in the United States these days, the false image of current life shown on TV not to be used as a standard of reality.

Understanding that the time for real rebellion against the ruling class is now should not have to have it follow the Death to Tyrants playbook. Hopefully, Senator Sanders will pull off the miracle needed to get him into the White House and get King Rat Trump forever out of it. When that happens and the current Republican led, generally wealthy ruling class is dethroned, the worst punishment meted out to them will be sending them off to Greenland, each ruling class parasite with a warm tent, a weapon sufficient to kill a walrus to eat and six months' of dry oatmeal to nurse them through the learning period needed to teach the parasites how to do for the first time in their spoiled lives the productive work needed to survive in Greenland. Hope this makes sense.



14. Stimulus-Response Behaviors

The behaviors for obtaining money and avoiding losing it examined with the Lucky Numbers game were instances of **goal directed behavior**. Inherent in the tossing of the dice in the prize awarding Lucky Numbers game is that there is a goal this behavior is directed towards, namely, that of obtaining a V dollar prize, and a

means to achieving that goal, the activity of tossing the dice to roll a lucky number. While many human behaviors are goal-directed, including not just the goal is of getting money or some commodity more immediately useful like food or warmth, our most elementary behaviors are of a more primitive class called **Stimulus-Response** behaviors, or in shorthand, **SR** behaviors that do not operate by working consciously towards a goal.

A clear example of an SR behavior is the reflex action of jerking your hand away from a lit match that is burning it painfully. In doing this there is no goal in mind before acting of putting your hand in a place distant from the lit match. Rather, in this case the stimulus, S, of the sharp pain and the response, R, the reflexive action of jerking your hand away from the pain-causing situation are preset in the brain from inborn, genetic information. Of course, there is an implied goal that jerking your hand away accomplishes, namely of getting it away in the flame. But, it must be stressed, that end point is not antecedent in your mind for your taking the action to get your hand away from the flame. This is intrinsically different from your feeling cold as a stimulus to conjuring up something to do to get warm as constitutes the formation of a goal to work towards in your mind. It is best to lay out the differences and similarities between goal directed and SR behavior in the cybernetic terms of formal control theory, but the time and effort it takes to teach this to the reader calls rather for a delay of it and here a shortcut diagramming of the two kinds of behavior we hope will suffice in the short term. We can write the SR behavior in a more complete form as

(130) SRG_{imp}

The S stimulus is the situation experienced that provokes an automatic, preset response. In humans such an S situation is accompanied by some form of the $E^* = -U^*v^*$ visceral expectation we discussed in Section 6, some situation that threatens life, even if only to a slight degree as a burn from a lit match might. The R response to such a stimulus is understood as the first take on it is inborn/genetic/instinctive. Doing R requires no pre-thought. And the G_{imp} term is the result of the response understood as the implied goal of the R activity, for the lit match, reflexive jerking away activity, one's hand winding up in some place sufficiently distant from the lit match to stop the sharp burning pain. In that sense the S-R behavior is a kind of cybernetic response from the G_{imp} implied goal being

the set point of the activity programmed or wired into the brain genetically as part of instinct.

This gives us a baseline for understanding goal directed behavior, a much later invention of evolution that reached its pinnacle only after our human species came into the game. Referring back to Eq139 for the SR behavior, goal directed behavior is most useful when there is no fixed R response sure or highly likely to be successful. In that case, the first question that comes up in the mind of a sentient being like us humans is, what do I do to resolve or alleviate the S, ($E^* = -U^*v^*$), stimulus? This infers that there exists a **menu** of possible responses, R_{menu} , to choose from.

As to where the recallable information in mind on the possible responses in R_{menu} come from, they are comprised of the **significant messages** that originated from the sensory experience of the individual including what's been communicated by other persons. Hence the menu of R responses, R_{menu} , for a particular S stimulus is a subset of a pool of significant notions and concepts that sits in a person's memory, available for recall when the appropriate S stimulus presents itself. We can diagram this as

$$(131) \quad SR_{\text{menu}}R(G)G$$

There are clear differences between the goal directed behavior specified above and the SR behavior diagrammed in Eq139. For the goal-directed we include an R_{menu} of possible responses for a particular goal G from which $R(G)$, a responses directed to achieving a goal that satisfies the S stimulus is selected as the activity to be tried that satisfies the S stimulus. We write the goal now as G with no subscript to indicate it as the goal conceived in mind to come about from the R response, the response selected being associated with the Goal as $R(G)$.

This crisp sense of goal directed behavior is important because it makes clear how the significance filter we have in our minds works to admit some sensory messages as useful information for us rejects or disregards other messages as insignificant and not to be consider in formulating what behavior to do to satisfy a particular S stimulus. A number of ramifications of this selection operation will be discussed at length now.

The first is that the culture that feeds information to you in the form of messages that seem significant from repetitive display has a great deal of control of what R(G) response you will select from the R_{menu} for a particular stimulus. Indeed, much of propaganda designed to control behavior operates in this way. An example is...

Next we want to discuss how we go about selecting a response to the emotions that may be stimulating us to action. This is done on the basis of which expectation, $E=ZV - Uv$, is greatest and as such provides the most pleasure in expectation or hope. This, of course, raises the question of where the values of the terms that form the individual's expectations, his or her suppositions of the values and probabilities, comes from. These are dependent on the pleasures and pains of objects and events obtained from instinct and experience including as messages transmitted to you by others.

These pleasures and pains of expectation are often transmitted from person to person in the form of T transient emotions. Singing or more generally, song, as a prime example can convey the emotion of excitement, which in turn brings about in the way we discussed earlier a greater positive, pleasant expectation instilling a greater confidence in success about whatever is being sung about or celebrated in song.

It is also important to point out that many social behaviors are of the SR type that arise from instinct and require no pre-thought of goal formation to play themselves out. They are the stuff of spontaneous social behavior. As these behaviors arose in evolutionary ancient times, they tend to be required for social outcomes, successful romantic love requiring it. Also, though, goal directed activity may be injected into almost any situation and it is hardly impossible for most if not all social responses to be thought out, some would be say to be faked, the basis of acting whether for public performance or just for getting by in the world for people on the job and otherwise.

Note here that language is very important in facilitating goal directed behavior because it greatly increases the distinctions that can be recognized between alternative choices of what to do to reach a particular goal. Contrast this to perceptual images like visual images as what are stored in memory and recalled that one can imagine would make it difficult for non-speaking animals to decide

between things as is required in goal directed behavior because it's much harder to distinguish between images than in verbal representations of them. For example, Eskimos have 28 words for snow because distinguishing between the different kinds could be a matter of life and death. Now think of the Eskimos trying to distinguish between the 28 flavors of whiteness from recall of the visual images of the snow. It might not be impossible, but it seems kind of hard to do.

Lastly note that Eq140 for the goal directed behavior is incomplete in not listing as a possible end point the failure to achieve the intended R(G) goal. The ramifications of this situation are easy to understand by going back to the standard Lucky Numbers prize awarding game where the player loses 2/3 of the time. We glean from that fact that experience provides as salient information not only the value of the goal when achieved by a particular response but also the frequency and, hence, probability of success in future entanglements with the same game. Note that these values learned by experience to be true may be trumped by cultural information pumped into your unsuspecting brain 24/7 by the information sector of the air brushed nine to five wage slave system we are all stuck living in, the only relief from it available being to try to overthrow the damn thing as our writing the piece is directed to as its goal or committing suicide, a horrible and unforgivable way to end the only life nature gives you to live.

Animals tend to do a lot of reflexive action, SR behavior. If you pull a bone with some juicy meat still on it away from the dog, pretty much guaranteed is that the dog will reflexively snarl at you and/or bite you. While it's more or less taboo in behavioral science to guess what an animal may have in mind or be thinking, it's a good guess that when it reacts to you taking its bone away, it isn't thinking at all. It's just an SR reflex.

The relationship of SR behavior to violence is worth a few lines here. I am prompted to just spit it out and declare that violence is often of the SR type, a spontaneous response to feeling threatened by something that ought to be destroyed if it can't be otherwise avoided. But nitpickers might argue this, so let me convey an aggressive action I personally experienced back some 50 years ago in my younger days. If you believe what I'm telling you - and I have no reason to lie about this - you'll see a clear instance of an SR aggressive response.

I'll try to keep the story short. This was before I got my PhD. Back in 1971 and temporarily dropped out of graduate school for whatever reason that would take too long to spell out here, I supported myself for a summer selling what were called back then "underground" newspapers, those that were against the Vietnam War and the government and for civil rights and such when such was not at all fashionable. In any event, I earned all of about \$20 a week from 24 hours of selling the newspapers and somehow managed to live off it, though repeatedly and not surprisingly running out of money and food and getting to know hunger personally for the last day or two before the next week's papers came out. Note that this was before food banks which only came into existence after the Patty Hearst/SLA food distribution attack on capitalism brought it into existence.

Anyway, a would-be street robber armed with a knife tried to steal my newspapers. The instant I caught the gist of his intentions by the look in his eye, I swung and hit him in the face with two winning punches, end of the problem as I then followed up with him on the ground and my hands around his throat until I felt the fight go pretty much completely out of him. I was not a trained boxer, I should stress, just instantly wound to the hilt by the threat of being knifed and robbed, instantly perceived with no time to think about what I was going to do, no time to form a goal about that in my head. Clearly this was reflexive behavior, SR, spontaneous, violent and defensively extremely effective.

The best sex is the same way. You don't have to strategize or think about what you're going to "do next" if your balls are pinned on the right way. It's spontaneous, rather animal like, like a dance you don't have to go to school to learn the steps for. I'd almost say God just puts it in your head, both the protective response and the sexual response, but God, at least the one I was exposed to in Catholic school frowned on such, so we'll have to give thanks to Jesus Darwin who enlightened us on evolution. And that's just where the causation for the SR behaviors comes from. That's why most of what most animals do is SR rather than goal directed, which is why we humans are much smarter and generally more successful than the lower animals. Easy to write six volumes on this subject.

Temporal coherence should direct me to telling you next that Mankind fell into the unhappy and near irreversible state of slavery back 10 millennia ago and that God is no cure for it in this life or in your imagined next one after you die. But all

you'll do, most of you, is just hate me for telling truth that upsets your emotional applecart to an unbearable degree. So instead I'll jump off to a few new and astonishing discoveries in science that will make the harsh truth of what I might have said more palatable.

Let me also add as we close this section that SR behavior includes not only the instinctive reflex behaviors that comprise so much of our spontaneous natural social responses, but also habit, which requires none of the goal directed thinking we commonly associate with human intelligence; obedience to instruction which requires little thought on the part of the obedient person and imitation, a primary influence on children's behavior and in adults often childish behavior.

A need to release this work prematurely to a narrow audience has us put a short-term halt to our explication of men and their weapons in the precise mathematical terms that pressing topic deserves. Instead, here, we will turn the knob to an ordinary language brief summing up of the conclusions we would have reached via another dozen or so mathematical sections we had planned. We take that task up now with ideas that flow from what we have just been talking about in the last section on SR behaviors. I will speak in a free form, stream of consciousness mold and ask forgiveness if the argument that comes out of that seems to drift into the margins of an Internet opinion on these contentious issues, for it is difficult to avoid this downside of going non-mathematical when I only have a few more hours to write this up.

In SR behaviors, the response, R , to the stimulus, S , is pretty much set in stone, fixed. There are no decisions to be made in the jerking away of your hand from the flame. There were no decisions in my throwing the two punches that came to protect me from the robber. My arm muscles just happened to work the way they did as an instinctive response, R , to the sensed threat as the stimulus, S .

In goal directed behavior, the goal proposed in mind, G_p , comes about often from a menu of possibilities that one decides from. Hunger felt while lost in the woods can direct the wanderer to stay in the woods and intentionally search for a berry bush or to aim more for a way out of the woods to get to a fast food restaurant back in civilization. If we take this hunger problem back to Valley Forge during the American Revolution, we see starving soldiers in winter with neither berry bushes

or McDonald's to look for choosing to boil shoe leather to munch on or straight ahead eating tree bark.

What to choose from the spectrum of possibilities for a person in the grip of hunger is not so much the point here, but rather the fact that some goals fit the bill optimally, a critical Big Mac, and some sub-optimally like oak tree bark – the latter from the perspective of the bit of hunger pain it assuages better than nothing at all. Understand that in such situations the driving force as to what to choose is less intellectual than emotional, to wit, the intense persistent displeasure/pain the individual wants to get rid of, to at least some extent, by whatever means, **some** behavior directed towards **some** goal that **might** work better than nothing.

Let's get off hunger now as the stimulus, S, and focus for the moment on the unpleasant emotions of fear and humiliation as S from a threat by another, explicit or tacit. Getting back to my situation with the would-be robber, the source of the stimulus, S, as it made itself known emotionally was this fellow armed with a blade eye to eye with me. And the response, R, was directed back where it did the most good to get rid of the immediate bad feeling he caused in me to trip the switch of the punches to his face.

But it is not always possible to strike out to whomever might be screwing with you enough to get rid of the fear and humiliation that can cause in a person. Indeed, restraint in such matters is common when striking out might just make matters worse as when your assailant or abuser effectively has total power over you. In that case, as with an abusive boss on a job you don't want to lose, there is no goal that can be proposed in your mind to get rid of those bad feelings, which just hang around and continue to make you feel bad.

But wait a minute, just as incessant hunger can be partially assuaged with a sub-optimal bite of tree bark or shoe leather, so can misery with rage over it directed to something or somebody other than the actual cause of it. You can kick the chair to release the anger in part, or kick the dog, or get angry and even kick your spouse or your kid. Not to get too intellectual, but that was the prime message in the playwright, Eugene Ionesco's, famed work, *Rhinoceros*: people tend to pass their own misery off to others aggressively. In a later section we would have written and hopefully will be, we call this "redirected aggression."

That is something we all know from experience even without any mathematical analysis, namely that people in a “bad mood” are not just unhappy about something, but also unnecessarily aggressive with others. How common is: “Look out for the boss. He’s in a bad mood today.” And that very likely from the licking he got from the bigger boss he couldn’t do anything about. The boss and the workplace are a prime setting for redirected aggression. As just about everybody goes to work, pretty much everybody is exposed to the boss on those occasions when he or she’s in a bad mood. Interestingly some good anecdotal evidence for this appeared a while back on *Family Feud*. The question asked was, “Who in your life makes it unnecessarily miserable for you the most?” My boss, SURVEY SAYS, was the number one answer.

Redirected or undeserved aggression shows up in a million places and in almost as many ways, from petty meanness you didn’t deserve and our near daily random mass murders in America at the local level to a game between groups at a higher level, right wing hating and attacking left wing, whites blacks and sometimes blacks whites for “no good reason”, Christians hating and attacking Muslims, and so on.

Such emotional causation of war on a grand scale is also not uncommon in history. World War I is a classic case if you accept the details in Barbara Tuchman’s *The Guns of August* as truth. Read it. And the next war, the nuclear one most of us are blind to because of distractions with the NFL, or the endless junk on the Internet. It will be the war your kids beg for the Kool Aid to end their horror and suffering with.

In Section 13, it was made clear that evolutionary competitiveness is a major factor in aggression between men. The ingenious discovery of agriculture and metals based advanced weapons made matters much worse, agriculture giving men an economic reason to enslave each other and efficient weapons gave some men the means to enslave other men. Certainly enslavement has been with mankind steadily from Egypt to Alabama in the last century, a good 7,000 years as a low ball estimate. As a good part of efficiently enslaving people is to not let them think they live in slavery, do you really think that “poof”, after 70 centuries of slavery it was all wiped out? A level of control that smacks of control is certainly the case from 9 to 5 for the 99%.

Forget about whether this is moral or immoral, for those words get tricky depending on who is using them. The point rather is that this level of control makes people **FEEL BAD**. That is not our opinion. Latest polls make it clear that upwards of 85% of people are significantly dissatisfied. The point of that is that this unresolved dissatisfaction swirls around society causing much redirected aggression. And that it in combination with man's natural evolution based competitiveness makes us ripe for major war again. And it will just be another stupid war fought by emotionally screwed up ponies like Donald Trump.

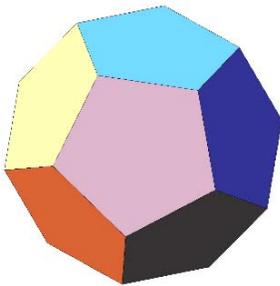
The last two things I want to say to sketch these ideas out before my time runs out is: that something better be done to get rid of the weapons before they get rid of all of us; and that something can be done other than shouting prayers to Heaven for some miracle that's just not going to happen because for the most part nobody hears your prayers except you and other human beings who also, just like you, don't have the power to pull off a miracle. Except, that is, by acting together, lots of them, lots of us. Really? Or is my saying that just another case of wishful thinking no more likely to work than praying to the clouds in the sky?

The impediments are fierce. There is no denying that. Societies who had no weapons to fight efficiently with have been wiped out. Our American Indians are a clear case in point, pretty much wiped out as an independent culture. And all those black primitives from Africa? They were mostly packed up in boats as ball and chain slaves with an outcome for them collectively so harsh, in truth, that you need a wall of books filled with blood to it justice. If you lay down your weapons, words of advice to any society, America included, goodbye Joe. No you have to get rid of your enemies first before you can get rid of weapons. Does that sound stupid? Does that sound impossible?

First let's clarify that as a goal we desire to be achieved, a one world society that has no enemies because it is all of us. That means no more wars because except for the loony alien creatures on the so-called *History Channel*, there's nobody outside of us One-Worlders to fight. Now we want to ask how we get to that place. All it takes is the biggest, baddest nations shaking hands and joining tighter because they collectively can by strong argument or threat of force bring the rest of the world into a One World society. As to that one last task, all it takes is for the leaders to understand that if they don't shake hands, they'll sooner or later be

throwing punches at each other with nuclear weapons. And then nobody will be left.

This stark and very unwelcome conclusion is made clear in *A Mathematical Theory of Men and their Weapons* not only from what's already been written in the first 14 sections but also in the sections that follow. What will be found there starts with the notion of **energy transfer**, the physical foundation of **everything that happens** including human interaction. Our development of it will eventually dovetail with and expand on the SR behavior we introduced earlier.



16. A New Religion?

Like a standard religion, *The Human Bee Hive* presents a general way of thinking and living one's life, based, though, not on divine revelation and scripture but on the 100% accepted, control engineering science of cybernetics originated by the mathematical genius, Norbert Wiener, back in the 1940s not long after Hiroshima and Nagasaki were obliterated with atom bombs.

The truth developed in *The Human Be Hive* tells us that the emotions of hate and violence will go critical before too long to eventually annihilate our species nuclearly unless *The Human Bee Hive's* plan to circumvent that horrific outcome is put into action. *The Human Bee Hive* is directed to ridding the world of weapons, great and small, with a plan that can realistically work if it can get enough people in the world, starting in America, to risk everything in their lives to form a one-world government. Such a new kind of nation that includes all the people in the world, in its having no other nation on the planet to wage war against, eliminates war flat out, most importantly, war of the nuclear variety.

The formation of such a unified society leads also to a Central Government with the power to ban guns and such for everybody, the advantages of which are not

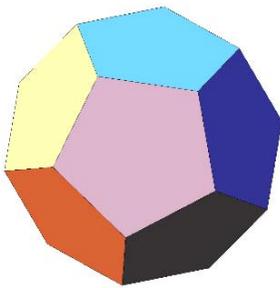
questioned by sane people. That not only eliminates the mass murders that plague America daily in these emotionally troubling times, but in applying also to law enforcement, who will also not be allowed weapons, eliminates their coercing obedience in the police state style that, however how much it may be hidden, is the norm for modern nations including our own. The details of this aspect of cleansing the world of weapons make it clear that however much the idea may seem at first impossibly utopian, it actually can work and in doing so grants much greater freedom to people even if at the expense of the perfect law and order regimen that has crept back so solidly in our lives since the rebellion against tyranny and pointless war seen in the late 1960s that's been snuffed out by the increasingly more repressive laws and policing tactics of the last 50 years.

While this suggestion that our so-called free and fair, democratic America is but a police state wearing a pretty dress may seem excessive, consider a bit of recent history. Years back when our founder, Ruth, and her chief disciple, Peter, were in grade school, the top lockup countries in the world of South Africa and the Soviet Union were thoroughly vilified as police states for that reason. But when the top lockup country in the world and in human history turns out now to be the United States, that police state criteria is conveniently ignored. South Africa and the Soviet Union were also were known as places of prison torture, another strong marker of a police state. Can people not appreciate that the tortures of Abu Ghraib were not isolated instances, but rather examples of torture accidentally revealed that is also found all over in jails and prisons in America. Indeed, lockup has been a horror for all who refused modern America's demand for total obedience, all the way down to tens of millions who have been locked up and tortured in cages for doing nothing more than possessing and smoking marijuana.

The key here is a clear understanding of obedience not as a virtue but as the mark of a thoroughly beaten subordinate or a slave, in modern times the standard wage slave of pseudo-democratic capitalism. Hence, while all other religions stress obedience, especially to the rules, wishes and traditions supported by the ruling class, CDTA shows with mathematical functions as clear and unarguable as $2+3=5$, that obedience of the kind and level imposed in modern times is thoroughly destructive of manhood, of loving relationships and happiness and of civilization itself, something we see so obviously in America's current falling apart under our police state head man, Donald Trump.

A clear understanding of how bad things are, though, runs sharply counter to the mentality of the general public, the great bulk of which have been inculcated into accepting obedience as a virtue from an early age on. You see this in prison warden type parents who destroy the natural willfulness of their youngsters as early as the so-called “terrible two’s.” You see this with teachers like Catholic nuns who preach obedience as the main virtue for their pupils endlessly through the school day. You see this with the half-smiling, half-bastard boss at work who has his boot up your butt 40 hours a week, the humiliations of which carry well beyond the workhours to destroy the self-respecting personality a person needs to form lasting personal relationships, without which there is no happiness in life. And you see it in police actions that go way beyond fairness when cops act like thugs in the employ of the ruling class.

Such a condemnation of parents, teachers and authority in general can be very difficult to grasp by citizens who’ve been inculcated with the praiseworthiness of obedience and of the enforcers of obedience since they were babies. For that reason, *The Human Bee Hive* uses objective mathematical reasoning whose logic provides an override to the emotional conditioning of obedience as a virtue.



17. America’s 3rd Millennium Relationship Experiment

It should be obvious, as with same-sex marriage in 3rd Millennium America, which, whatever kind of social relationship is taken to be normal and acceptable depends on social sanctioning of that relationship. In the year 2000 at the turn of the 3rd Millennium, homosexual behavior was still generally considered to be taboo. Now in America it is accepted by the majority of people to be as normal as eating breakfast every morning. In parallel, in the 1950s a woman’s place was in the

home raising children. Now in the 3rd Millennium her socially sanctioned place is in the workplace.

We want to examine such changes in relationships from their biologically natural state in terms of why these cultural experiments were performed, what their consequences are, intended and unintended, how this affect happiness and ultimately what can be done to ameliorate the unhappy consequences of these cultural experiments in relationships. Because relationship issues, which include those between workers and bosses and between children and caregivers, can be contentious, we approach their understanding with mathematics given the trust the educated amongst us have in science, particularly the mathematical sciences. We depend less on the analyses and conclusions of standard psychology other than in some of the raw data it provides because of psychology's exhaustive adulteration with culturally ideology.

An example of such raw data, mathematical in form, is of males having a one third higher frequency of being homosexual than their older brothers, see [Wikipedia](#). This points directly to a developmental cause of male homosexuality in terms of social dominance rather than the genetic causation attribution of the bent towards it to unavoidable inborn circumstances. That this role of male to male dominance in the making of a homosexual is a reasonable surmise is further suggested by George Orwell's anecdotal noting of the noticeably high rate of homosexual behavior in the male homeless at the bottom ranks of the social hierarchy (in his book, *Down and Out in Paris and London*.) While these two pieces of data are in line with the control and dominance of males in modern civilization having significant responsibility for homosexuality, they are too scant to be conclusive in themselves and require our digging deeper into the characteristics of all biologically unorthodox relationships with precise mathematical logic and argument.

In that regard we are fortunate that science, whatever the level of inane science denial in present day America, reached its pinnacle in the 3rd Millennium, not just in the computer technology that has revolutionized our lives, but also in the development since WWII of a broad spectrum of new ideas in basic science which, stuck together properly like the pieces of jigsaw puzzle, can provide a unified

picture of all of nature including human nature and our social relationships of love and hate that are so much a part of it.

These relatively new mathematical concepts include **cybernetics**, the brainchild of genius mathematician, Norbert Wiener, **information theory** developed by the American electrical engineer, Claude Shannon and the Hungarian mathematician, Alfred Renyi, and the quantitative measures of **diversity** introduced to science by the British statistician and WWII code cracker, Edward Simpson, all of which made their first appearance after WWII.

These can be tied together with **mathematical expectation** from 17th Century Elementary Probability Theory, **natural selection in evolution** mathematically spelled out first in the 1920s by the British population biologists, R.A. Fisher and J.B.S Haldane, our own illuminating mathematics of **hierarchy** derived most basically from **Simpson's Reciprocal Diversity Index**, our matrix based, **empirical set theory** that complies, as standard set theory does not, with Gödel's incompleteness theorem, the 19th Century **circuit theory** formulations of Gustav Kirchhoff and the famous **microstate entropy equation** of Ludwig Boltzmann reformulated in terms of an extension of the Simpson's diversity index to produce a mathematical unification of all knowledge suggested most recently in the 1998 book, *Consilience*, by the noted evolutionary biologist, Edward O. Wilson.

Our unified theory of everything extends to a precise mathematical explanation of the most disturbingly miserable and violent aspects of modern social relationships including between police and the public, as based as it should be on a single mathematical notion that provides the ultimate foundation or cause of everything in the material universe and in the human psyche. Specifically, all processes are ultimately explained with **cybernetics**, also called **control theory**, the scientific underpinning of thoroughly accepted systems or control engineering. This is possible because of the intrinsic synonymy of **control** and **causation** that allows the cause of anything and everything to be ultimately with control theory or cybernetics.

A primary objective of this work is to clarify the cultural evolution seen in world history as a combination of man's technological advances and of various experiments in social relationships that societies introduced to their members

that often were directly related to its new inventions including, very importantly, increasingly lethal and sophisticated weapons.

The first snapshot of man we want to look at is of Stone Age life 10 Millennia ago prior to the development of agriculture and metal based weapons. We posit that man's emotions had evolved by that time to fit that those pre-modern circumstances, the most important one of which was that man lived in small groups and survived as a hunter-gatherer. It is important to have a central focus on man's emotions in that Stone Age era in our investigations because in the end analysis happiness versus unhappiness in life can only be properly specified in terms of our emotions, which we spell out with mathematical simplicity and clarity in Section 1 of this critique.

The invention of agriculture brought about significant changes in that primitive lifestyle, not the least of which was a need to defend the fertile lands that produced agricultural foodstuffs, a warlike competition that became increasingly important over time given the sharp increase in population that this newfound invention of farming made possible. Given the assumption that weapons on both sides in such warring for land and resources essentially were approximately the same in fighting power, it is clear logically that whichever side had the most warriors on their side was the more likely to win.

The problem, then, however it may have been appreciated by those burdened with it, was to build a group large in size, larger than one's enemies. Those who did not do this ultimately went belly up and died out. Those who did do it, though, had problems of their own with the individual needs of members of the group competing with group needs. A Pollyannaish view of human nature clouds the problem. A realistic view in terms of the readily available historical data of the Ten Commandments moral rules of the Judeo-Christian faith makes the following reality clear.

There would have been no need to make a rule that murder should not be done on another group member if the emotional impulse to it was completely absent from man's cognitive machinery in the first place. There would have been no need to make a rule to not steal from another member of the group if the emotional impulse to it was completely absent from man's cognitive machinery in the first place. There would have been no need to make a rule that a man should

not covet his neighbor's wife, obviously for sex, if the emotional impulse to it was completely absent from man's cognitive machinery in the first place.

An elaboration of the mathematics of natural selection in Section 3 of this critique makes clear that competition between groups, however broadly or narrowly the group may be drawn, gives a large plus to aggression, up to and including murder, to theft, whether outright or moralized as some "acceptable" way to access another's resources, and to shtupping all the other men's wives if you have the wherewithal to do it. Beyond this inverted use of the Ten Commandments in this argument for man acting like an animal, we can also look at all the other animals in the biosphere's menagerie to see that the quite strict mathematical rules of natural selection in evolution make all of them, which includes all of us, fundamentally prone to aggression, theft and unlimited fucking when we are able to get away with these things.

Now, if the point even has to be made at all, such behavior, encouraged by an emotional bent or "temptation" to them is not good for keeping group size large and maximally cooperative. This getting people to "act right" towards others in their group is undeniably an experiment, something new, relative to earlier hunter-gatherer small group man whose group or clan consisted of family, core and extended, whose emotions towards each other as family, that is as super-friends, naturally tended to override inflicting pain on them via aggression, theft and or wife-shtupping.

The moral rules based relationship experiment to preserve un-naturally larger group size obviously worked given that whatever disapproval and/or physical punishments had to be meted out from time to time for breaking the rules, this is the general standard form of human civilization, ancient and modern. People generally accept restriction on behavior that ultimately protects the group on which the ultimate survival and happiness of the individual depends. Indeed, it may be looked on as a Pollyanna that works well for all concerned.

There's more to the relationship experiments than the invention of agriculture brought about, however. And the next big experiment is far from any idealized Pollyanna. Superior weapons made all the better over time with the metals-based weaponry of the Bronze Age 5000 years back enabled slavery to take place. Slavery is a great boon for the early farming communities of man for a slave is

able with farming to produce enough food not just for himself or herself but also for the slave masters and their families. Terrible for the slave, it's a great economic boon for slave owners. With little need to get mathematically into how it makes a wreck out of the slave emotionally, pretty much all happiness flushed down the drain, we need to ask the question next of how slavery evolved in its forms over time. A great reference book for it is *A Brief History of Slavery* by the British historian, Jeremy Black.

Without our having to go over everything in his book, broadly speaking there are really two kinds of slavery. The one kind is to work the slave to death as was typical in Caribbean plantation slavery a few centuries back. This usually took about 8 years with the dead slave replaced with a fresh one brought over on the boat from Africa. The other kind of slavery entailed raising new slaves like a rancher raises livestock. The existing slaves have families and the kids grow up to be the next generation of slaves, their upbringing guided as much as possible by the slave owners and their proxies to making good adult slaves out of the kids as they matured. Once the offspring are tamed from generation to generation, such slaves can be granted more freedom because their behavioral programming makes them more compliant to control. This routine is the bases of the serfdom that Western Christianity took such an active role in controlling and preserving. More "freedom" than hard core plantation slavery because the serf type slaves are more amenable to control, but still lots of control and its misery including that from the personal social relationship malfunctioning that having a slave driver's boot up your butt engenders.

The big question, of course, that we need to ask as it affects all of us in modern civilization is whether or not slavery still exists as the wage slavery of capitalism. Karl Marx said it did in his lifetime work, *Das Kapital*. Wrong in his prescription for how to get rid of it through Communism, the end of private ownership, his argument for modern capitalist society as wage slavery has a few strong points that are hard to just chuck out the window because you're taught from the 1st Grade on that Communism and Karl Marx are nothing but unabashed evil.

Most everybody asked, that is, in various polls taken from time to time but not broadcast with much force, dislikes their job and their boss, hate being not too harsh a word to use for the emotions felt. Why? We said earlier that the misery of

slavery was so patent that it didn't have to be argued and analyzed, but if you need that to be spelled out in print, following one's own genetically inculcated self-interests, your own desires, is what you were born to, and obeying rules that derive from the maximization of another's self-interest, unless they're family or close trusted members of your group, is as inherently insulting as having a large gob of spit landing on your eye every five minutes.

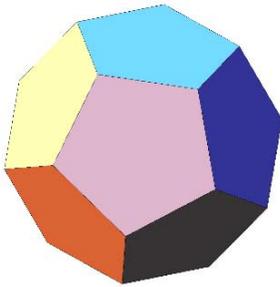
We do all this mathematically in the following 300 or so electronic pages, to a great extent to make clear that attributing your misery in life to yourself, the devil or mental illness, whatever that psychobabble phrase is meant to mean, is an error. You have to think about rebellion against a slave driver like your boss and everybody else he's connected with who supports him or her in society as something that must feel VERY GOOD because despite the punishments for it, as with the crucifixion of the rebellious Roman slaves that followed Spartacus back then, it feels GOOD beyond description.

Most people these days have little sense of what freedom feels like because control and obedience to the slave master and his rules is so firmly inculcated from the day you're born. So it's a cliff you have to just jump off and hope for a happy landing. We get into all this mathematically to provide evidence that you have nothing to lose because there is no reward in Heaven after death for those obedient to God and the slave masters and drivers he encourages you to also obey.

The rest of the argument may sound like just another ideology being encouraged to be accepted, but the math that follows makes it clear that this bullshit is much better than their bullshit because its arguments are couched in $2+3=5$ form. And if you don't trust in the truth of $2+3=5$ and the rest of super-logical mathematics, you're too stupid to be aroused from your zombie robot walking dead existence.

You can't make sense out of a problem that's ultimately one of keeping your happy emotions and avoiding the unhappy ones without having an unclouded clear sense of human emotion as a replacement for the gobbledygook psychobabble that currently permeates the pseudoscience of psychology, which we show to be less than a true science in its being critically tainted with political ideology and dogmatic moralism. We approach this problem as our first major task by specifying the basic emotions of hope, anxiety, fear, relief,

disappointment and excitement and the like in terms of the mathematical expectation and cybernetics found of a game of chance called ***Lucky Numbers***. After that we expand the scope of our thought experiment to show that the causal foundation of all processes in nature derives from the basic principles of ***cybernetics***.



18. Why Mathematics?

When asked what makes the planets go round, everybody back in Christian Europe in medieval times, rich and poor, educated and peasant, said, “Why, the angels, of course. Everybody knows that.” Indeed, those who said otherwise were thought to be crazy. The basis of people accepting the angel theory as truth was the authority of those who promulgated this belief, the religious community including the monks who staffed the fledgling universities of that time.

That piece of supposed truth was eventually overthrown by Newton’s Law of Gravity whose claim to truth rested on two very intuitive criteria for truth: observation, which underpins truth via the familiar catchphrase of “seeing is believing”; and mathematical logic as strikingly exemplified by $2+3=5$ whose truth nobody yet still sane even in these mad science denying times denies.

Newton’s discoveries of how astronomical nature works by gravity made for a sea change in the criteria for truth by shifting it significantly from what an authority says the truth is to truth derived from observation and logic. The dependence of these important criteria on mathematics in Newton’s masterpiece is clear. The data he based it on are numbers that derive from the astronomical observations

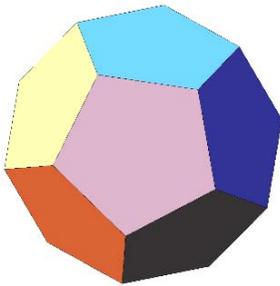
of Johannes Kepler and the Law of Gravitation is expressed in the logically cohesive form of a differential equation.

These two bases of truth, observation and logic, ushered in the Age of Science. Newton's successors in the development of science included luminaries such as Michael Faraday with his Law of Electromagnetic Induction. It also is based on observed numerical data and spelled out as a differential equation. Other branches of knowledge were also strongly affected by the Newtonian paradigm of observation and logic even if not expressed mathematically. The Enlightenment philosophy seen in the aftermath of Newton was based not on the divine authority and inspiration of the earlier Middle Ages but on observation and experience organized or glued together with rational, logical, argument. This leads to the question of whether a science influenced explanation of something is part of science, itself, the answer to which is easy to give because nobody considers Enlightenment philosophy as science as much as its structure was heavily influenced by Newton's ushering in the Age of Science with gravity.

It also raises the interesting follow-up question of whether a branch of knowledge based on observation and logic but not mathematical in nature like psychology is a true science. The question is reasonable given that much of psychology sounds like and takes the compositional form of philosophy. The absence of mathematics in psychology is also noteworthy. While central principles in the science of biology are given mathematical expression in modern times, psychology expresses its primary notions in ordinary language that not only lacks the precision and internal logic of mathematics but that is downright imprecise and fuzzy, what is labeled by detractors as psychobabble. The importance of mathematics as the proper language of science is stressed by the mathematics based physical sciences, the truth of whose basic laws is seldom questioned.

As Newton put us into the Age of Science with science that was totally mathematical in form, does that not suggest that knowledge that lacks the precision and logic of mathematics might be better categorized as something less than science from its lacking the criteria for truth that the precision and logic of math in science inherently provides? While some may say that this issue is debatable and that the human sciences yet deserve the respect that accrues to hard core mathematical science, the above arguments place doubt on that position.

All of this is to say that for a consideration of men and their weapons to be respected as consisting of truth rather than just another piece of ideology in the service of political power, it should be imbedded in a science of human cognition and behavior that is mathematical in form. To develop such, something new and seemingly very difficult for science given that nobody has come near doing it yet, we imitate the very trick that Newton used to develop the Law of Gravitation. He invented a new mathematics, in his time and for his purposes, the calculus. And that is exactly what we are going in this work, develop a new mathematics that provides a trustworthy foundation for a new ideology-free science of psychology that will make clear sense of men and their weapons and why we must get rid of the weapons before, in this nuclear age, they get rid of all of us. This possibility should be taken very seriously with Trump having control of nuclear weapons and an erratic, amoral disposition, as shown by his government shutdown, to uncaringly do things that seriously hurt people.



19. The Difficulty in Locating the Source of One's Unhappiness

First, we must ask if unhappiness is a real enough problem in America to spend time analyzing it and developing solutions to it. What is the evidence for it? Beyond the high incidence of “mental illness” in America, the greatest of any advanced nation, we have epidemics of obesity, alcohol and drug abuse, near daily mass murder, insomnia and migraine headaches found in a significant portion of the population and rampant relationship failure and loneliness. The latter is well spelled out in the December, 2018, issue of *The Atlantic* in the story of *The Sex Recession* which is prefaced with the remark: “What’s turning Americans off physical intimacy – and what does it mean for our happiness.”

Relatedly, the lack of attractiveness in our adult population should also not be overlooked as an indication of the general unhappiness that exists in modern day America. This connecting up of ugly adults with the unhappiness we are saying lies beneath the sea of unattractive faces to be found on a bus ride in any major city in America like Baltimore, Sacramento, Las Vegas or Albany, NY should be self-evident. We are instinctively attracted to good-looking people because they are worthy of forming a relationship with because they are or have the potential to be personally successful which shows on their faces. Even a brief perusal of bus riders or workers as they start their day or finish at their places at work should make it clear that there's not much happiness out there, the endlessly cheery faces you see on TV in its programming and ads notwithstanding.

To make clear that the vast preponderance of this unhappiness derives from the politico-economic system we find ourselves stuck in, we must elaborate on our consideration of SR versus goal directed behavior begun in Section 14. Recall from Eq253 the inborn reflex behavior whose response, R , taken to a stimulus, S , does not require an intermediate development in mind or the thought of a proposed goal, G_p , as does the goal behavior schematized in Eq252

$$(132) \quad SRG_a$$

$$(133) \quad SG_pRG_a$$

There are two other types of behavior besides simple reflex that follow Eq132, habit and obeying a command to a specific behavior, both of which entail behavior without significant thought of the consequences of that behavior. Habit follows the same course as a reflexive response to a stimulus. The similarity of them both as SR behaviors is clear from reflex, on the one hand, developing genetically over intergenerational time from its repeatedly bringing about success in goal achievement, G_a for an organism and, on the other, habit forming developmentally during a lifetime from its also repeatedly bringing about a successful goal achieved, G_a . In both cases, there is no need to propose a goal in mind, G_p , which leads to the formation of a proper response, R , to achieve it because that proper response is already known and available whether from genetic information for reflex or learned information for habit.

As to the latter, for example, the experienced driver of an automobile need not consciously consider the outcome of every turn of the steering wheel or

application of the brake or gas pedal in order to bring about an optimal response to this or that particular driving situation. In essence, there is no “thinking” as we usually understand the word in acting with a reflexive or habitual response. This is also the case in obedience to a command to engage in this or that clearly specified behavior. Again, there is no thinking in the usual sense of the word.

All of these SR behaviors, whether reflex, habit or obedience, are in sharp distinction to goal directed behavior for which the stimulus, S, does not have a pre-set, automatic response, R. Rather, as diagrammed in Eq252, the mind must first propose a goal, G_p , that suits the stimulus, S, and then further propose a response to it, R, as the means to achieving that goal, G_a . This explication of goal directed behavior is, though, rather murky and needs to be clarified further using the **control theory** we earlier introduced back in Section 7. Specifically let’s use as an example of a stimulus, S, the visceral emotion of cold a person feels when exposed to a temperature, θ , that is lower than some set point temperature, θ_s , not as set on a thermostat, but that the body feels naturally comfortable at. The difference between the two in negative terms, $\theta - \theta_s$, understood as an **error** for the person feeling the cold: $-\varepsilon = \theta - \theta_s$

If we consider 72°F as that comfortable set point, $\theta_s=72^\circ\text{F}$, then how cold the person feels as the stimulus, S, to some sort of warming behavior is the error, expressed in negative terms as

$$-\varepsilon = \theta - \theta_s = 32^\circ - 72^\circ = -40^\circ$$

In this scenario the goal proposed or sought after, G_p , is to warm the temperature up to the comfortable set point, $\theta = \theta_s$. When we introduced these characteristics for a thermostat-controlled heater, the response to the $-\varepsilon$ error as stimulus was the furnace turning on automatically. But more generally for an individual feeling cold, a **menu** of possible responses exists for one may warm oneself by a fire or put on more clothing or turn on a heater to get the temperature up to the comfortable set point, $\theta=\theta_s$. Further while this example of goal directed behavior requires the individual to **select** or choose from a variety of optional responses to achieve the G_p proposed goal of getting warm, more generally the proposed goal to eliminate the error or stimulus may also require selection from a menu of possibilities. That is, if one finds oneself starving while lost in a forest, there is minimally a menu of two options for satisfying hunger as the S stimulus, spending

one's time looking for a berry bush in the forest or finding a path out of the forest in order to pick up a burger at a fast food place back in civilization. And once that is decided, how one goes about achieving either goal further selection from a menu of responses: Shall I go this way or that way to find a path out of the woods if that is the goal selected.

Hence, to make it clear – and this is very important – goal directed behavior requires consideration of a menu of possibilities and selection from that menu for both the goal proposed, G_p , to resolve the error, $-\epsilon$, or stimulus, S , and of the specific response to be done, R , to achieve that goal, G_a .

There is little problem, to be sure, with proposing or selecting a goal, G_p , to resolve a stimulus, S , or error, $-\epsilon$, when that stimulus takes the form of feeling the displeasure of cold or hunger. One aims at getting warm or getting food respectively as the proposed goal, G_p . And from there, the actual physical response that inherently takes the form of some kind of energy transfer (including material transfer), is generally straightforward. But that is not the case for a broad variety of unpleasant feelings that represent some sort of error, $-\epsilon$, or stimulus, S , to be acted on. These include a spectrum of social feelings like feeling offended or humiliated or disappointed or dismayed. For one may ask oneself: Why do I feel like such a jerk this morning without feeling the why of it or cause of it that would lead to proposing a goal to be achieved that would resolve or get rid of such negative feelings. Is it something I did? Or some “mental illness” that comes from only God knows what? Or is it the devil or some other kind of evil spirit causing me to feel this way. Or is it something my sister-in-law said at last month's Thanksgiving dinner when we had her over the house.

Not that the cause of the unpleasant feeling as stimulus and error supposed is central to the formation or proposition of a goal, G_p , to get rid of the error. Indeed, one might plan on calling up the sister-in-law and giving her a piece of your mind or alternatively saying a prayer to God to get rid of this feeling whose cause you are not sure of. Or making an appointment to seek counseling with a mental health professional. And so on and so on. Very important in all this conjecturing is the menu of possibilities you choose from. If your boss at work tells you to do something in an insulting way and you then go home and get annoyed at your husband because you feel that the tone he used when talking

about the beef tips you prepared that evening wasn't quite complementary enough, it is hard to propose the goal of spitting in your boss's face the next day because of the cultural attitude broadly prescribed in capitalist democracies punching the boss is a no-no and/or evidence of some form of emotional dysfunction. Indeed, having such a "bad attitude", even when punching or otherwise attacking the boss would genuinely make you feel better, is more or less utterly taboo.

Instead, while offended workers may have "fantasies" of such retaliation as the proposition in mind or wish for such goals, there are two quite simple SR behaviors, habit and obedience, that deter from going to the next step of taking up an actual response to achieve the goal of giving the punk bastard a black eye. One of them is obedience to the restrictive rule for such. And the other is the formation of habit starting way back in one's grade school years and even earlier that one must respect authority. What this does, assuming that the cause of your bad feeling is the boss, is to bottle up the bad feelings in your head to keep them making you feel bad to some degree indefinitely. And the other is to select or propose the **wrong** goal to get rid of the bad feeling. This is a ***misdirected goal*** proposed that leads to a misdirected behavior.

Certain forms of it as a misdirected release of aggression are entirely common. For we have all heard of the person who comes home from work and kicks the dog to get lessened the bad feeling picked up at work whose proper direction of aggression towards it cause, the boss, is not allowed. This phenomenon of misdirected goal formation from incorrect supposition of cause is very general in religious circles where the devil is blamed for evil of every kind imaginable and more generally in modern times when bad feeling is attributed to something as if not more vague and mysterious as evil spirits, "mental illness", with little further analysis to place the cause of the "mental illness" squarely on the tangible reasons for it. This is classic in blaming a mass murder on no motive or "mental illness without calling out what caused the obvious aberrant feelings that caused the aberrant aggressive intended goals and responses or behaviors.

First we want to call out the emotions that drive such aberrant violence. It is absurd to consider a behavior, essentially a response, R, that has zero stimulus, S, or error, $-\epsilon$, to be resolved. What should be looked for in consideration of our

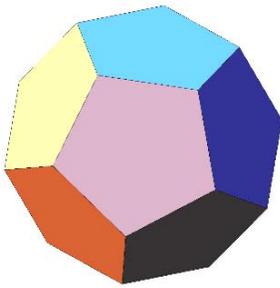
mathematical analysis for hedonism as the basis of motivation is some form of displeasure as the $-\epsilon$ error that stimulates an R response that is pleasant in some way. The notion that a mass murderer like Stephan Paddock, the killer in Las Vegas, had no motive as was spouted ridiculously by the LV Metro Police Chief is just plain silly.

Our analysis in this section and back at Eq200 that suggests some kind of displeasure as motive fits too well with Paddock having lost 1.5 million dollars gambling in the few months leading up to the massacre. Whether then from the reflexive blind rage that such a loss would have stimulated and/or Paddock's sense that the massive blood he was about to spill would hurt the Las Vegas image and its casino business, surely such a loss would have been felt as very, very unpleasant. Paddock taking great pleasure in the release of his emotions by such revenge is also very sensible, the reason the cause was buried in the investigation being that the truth of it really would have hurt Las Vegas for, as we further clarify in a later section, Las Vegas is nothing but legalized grand theft from a raw mathematical analysis of casino gambling we get into in Section 30.

This is not to deny as is also gotten into in that section that Paddock's life had other unhappiness in it including the loss and absence of love in it. This ultimately points the causation of misery in life, not just for Paddock but for most people to the excessive, abusive control over people by a society's ruling class. That this is a very powerful and hidden/denied piece of truth should be obvious given the solution to that problem laying directly in revolution against the ruling class, something they would certainly not want considering the fate of overthrown ruling classes in history as happened in the aftermath of the French and Russian revolutions.

However, even if the fate of the ruling class in the revolution this analysis inescapably encourages were not bloody, say deportation of all billionaires to Greenland with a shovel, a tent, an axe and six months' worth of fuel and dry oatmeal, it would be stupid to suggest it if there were not some solid truth in the accusation that the rules and regulations of civilized societies were, indeed, the cause of the preponderant part of human unhappiness. For that reason we will take up the fact, nuances and ramifications of the control of the many by the

privileged few using the control theory we introduced earlier.



20. DEATH BY ENTROPY

We also want to talk a bit about a very important ramification of thermodynamic entropy understood properly as energy dispersal that touches significantly on the sociopolitical problems of the day. Though we have not applied our new form of entropy in terms of the Dodecahedron Equation to the 2nd Law of Thermodynamics, if we take a minute to draw a quick sketch of it, it will be seen that it makes for a clear intuitive sense of this law that mathematically tells us that the entropy of an isolated system always increases. Understanding entropy as energy dispersal understands this increase in entropy at the molecular level as a randomization process that takes the large size macromolecules that we are made of and pulling them apart.

This is what is ultimately responsible for aging and death. We literally fall apart, not only figuratively but also from the molecular perspective, literally. Our highly ordered macromolecules break down, break apart. It is not that we don't have a large array of repairing mechanisms to restore the molecular damage done by the energy and matter dispersal dynamic of entropy. But these are also made of highly ordered macromolecules, and once they begin breaking apart and physiologically breaking down, we no longer manage to function sufficient to stay alive and we die.

This entropy driven breakdown process affects our neural systems also. Whatever the sense Alzheimer's is given of a "disease", considering that half the population over the age of 85 has it, the drive to make money by the medical profession and its pharmaceutical allies aside, logic even at the level of simple common sense

tells us that it's a natural part of aging whose restoration by drugs and therapy has its limits.

Ultimately, Alzheimer's or no, the brain ceases to function. Indeed, death in rigid medical terms and in legal terms is understood as "brain death." And after this happens and all of the repairing mechanisms of the body cease to work and give it over to the bugs and bacteria, the brain rots out completely and effectively disappears. And along with it goes the human mind, which we commonly understand to be the site and engine of perceiving and thinking and feeling, of the latter, both pleasure and displeasure. Ultimately, the 2nd Law of Thermodynamics, something nobody has ever seen to be disobeyed, is responsible for this elimination of the mind from existence in any form.

And without a mind of some tangible biological construction, there can be no feeling of the pleasure or joy of Heaven. In that sense, the afterlife exists only at the tip of the tongues of fast talking predators no less comen than speed spinner Trump, whose repeated arguments that he is innocent of his treasonous theft of the White House are as false as his professed love for his Barbie Doll wife, other than as the sociopolitical window dressing she provides.

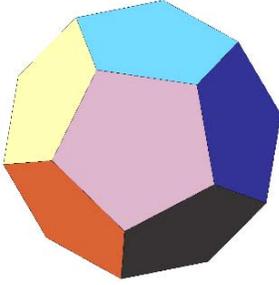
Which is to say that deistic religion is all bullshit prized and alibied by the powers that be because the central tenant of religion is to be good, especially to the privileged ruling class that supports this hokum. That the psychobabble spouting of clinical psychology gives two thumbs up to religion should also see it not as the part of science, whose authority it steals, but as nothing but a secular religion whose primary interests are the interests of the ruling class and whose arguments for good and bad, sane and crazy are as flimsy as the chapter and Verse preaching of loser, Ted Haggard style televangelists weed whacking for cash donations from those in today's Garden of Eden who are dumber than a pound of thin sliced Swiss cheese. Entropy says this is so, dummies. There is a scientific reason why 93% of biologists, the most of any science, do not believe in an afterlife and all the melted Swiss cheese that goes with it that piece of nonsense that arose historically to glorify emperors and pharos and assure dumb as Swiss cheese soldiers to fight for the privileged ruling class and not fear death because they had another life coming after it. The only cure for the pain in life is to risk that dumb life of yours and revolt against the privileged ruling class who are responsible for

93% of your pain – and do it before the pain becomes so great towards the beginning of adulthood that you fall to your knees and take the alternative option of eating shit with all significant hope focused on the delusional possibility of happiness in Heaven, where if God does exist, it is only to high speed sodomize all the dead 9-year-old altar boys he can get his foul hands on.

The next question we want to ask is whether we should believe “scripture” in this matter or mathematical science. Obedient people don’t “think.” Their lives are not concerned with goal directed behaviors whose goals and means specifications are the products of cognitive operation or thinking. They don’t think. They just obey, do what they are told to do and think what they are told to think. Hence no amount of logical argument can take them out of that level of behavior programming that is little different than the reflex behavior of insects and other invertebrates. As such no amount of insistence for mathematical thinking can convince that class of people that their views and actions are incorrect or stupid.

To make this argument beyond name calling, we need to understand the **hierarchical nature** of the societies that transform a good many of their adult human beings into unthinking robots. Two of the functions needed to spell this out are closely allied with **information**, an utterly general but also confusing word in itself whose clarification is valuable and important because the concept of information has meaning for everybody given that everything we think and know is information for us, but is poorly explained by science to date in information theory.

Let me add a few last words here. Life is a very simple game, really a contest between order dictated most basically by DNA and entropy. Entropy, as we will spelled it out in a later section increases molecular diversity or dispersion, the spreading out of molecules in a random or disordered pattern. This screws up your biological machinery. The homeostatic systems fail to operate well. And down you go. That’s ultimately the purpose, so to speak, of everything you do, including reproduction, which is nothing more than homeostasis on a grand scale, the birth of new carriers of your (and your husband’s) particular set of DNA making up for the eventual loss of you, death of you both, by the real father time, wicked nasty ever-randomizing, disordering entropy.



21. CIVILIZATION AND CRIMINAL BEHAVIOR

Earlier we talked at length about R realizations and E expectations and their pleasures and displeasures as come about respectively from obtaining and losing money. Later in Section 7, we tied up this analysis with visceral behaviors associated with the loss of life rather than the loss of money and with the survival behaviors undertaken to avoid death. This dynamic is relatively straight forward when applied to the interaction of an individual with nature as with a person avoiding starvation or freezing to death by appropriate behaviors. Things get complicated quickly, though, for the interaction of a person with another or others as regards outcomes of life and death.

Looked at closely, the F fitness function of Eq100 can aim human interaction in two opposing directions, co-operation and competition. That we are as a species heavily laden with both drives is apparent from history's rich examples of man's enormously powerful societies and his enormously destructive wars. These drives, though, expressed for populations must have manifestations in individuals to be present in the populations they are members of.

An individual who restrains immediate personal fitness or self-interest in his (or her) behaviors for group interest ultimately increases personal fitness and its associated pleasures when the benefits of group success are distributed to him. While such restraint may come about voluntarily from an individual's association of the group's success with his own benefit, individual behaviors that are understood to be detrimental to group success may also be restrained by the group through threat of punishment as may range from social disapproval to legal sanction.

To the extent that the restraint of intragroup aggression, self-imposed and group reinforced, preserves group cohesion, cooperation and success that results in

benefit to the individual, all goes well with the group. Whatever the complications in that assertion for civilized people when looked at under the microscope, such relative peace and harmony has been witnessed for the tribe level, hunter-gatherer, primitive groups that have managed to persist long enough to have been observed and recorded in modern times.

There is a dramatic change for our species, however, once human genius develops agriculture (including ranching) back about 10,000 years. For while hunter-gatherers have little use of slaves, each person in their group being able to obtain enough food by their labor to feed only themselves, agriculture, a much more efficient mode of food production, allows for significant food surplus. By that, we mean that one person can sow and harvest enough food for more than just himself as allows that one person to do the work of feeding two or more with some people fed without doing the work it takes to get the food. While this could be interpreted in a stretch as one person generously providing the food for others altruistically in the age of agriculture, this situation also fits slavery once it is understood that the motive of the food provider is not altruism but avoiding punishment threatened by the slave owner.

This becomes all the clearer once the slave dynamic is explicated in feedback control terms. The two terms of primary interest in this cybernetic process are the set point and a measure of the energy provided for the system as we showed for the proportional heater.

The first question is who sets the goals for slave labor? Without further question, it is the slave owner. The second question is who provides the energy. Now while it may be argued that the slave owner has the job of deciding the details of what must be done as located in the x_s endpoint goal of the slave labor possibly along with the sub-goals of the specifics of how the slave should do its work, the energy in hard physical terms comes from the slave.

The control of the slave in terms of what it does, x_s , clearly resides in the boss or slave owner. To the extent that control is the opposite or absence of freedom, the slave master clearly in controlling the slave deprives it of its freedom. Now in the sense that the slaves and the owner can be understood as belonging to two different populations, this

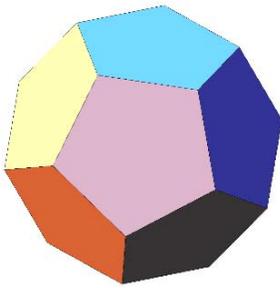
While it may be argued that the slave receives some benefits of its labor in terms of being fed clothed and housed, the restrictions placed on the slave in all areas of behavior that may disfavor the fitness interests of the slave owners clearly tilt the outcomes of the slaves' behaviors unpleasantly against their interests. The selling of parts of a slave's family including children for the sake of economic efficiency for the slave owners is an obvious example of this. As to such producing displeasure for the slaves and making their lives miserable, the empirical reality of this whatever the slave master ideology in eras of ball and chain slavery obviates the need for extensive analytical argument.

That the ancient Middle Eastern civilizations of man were slave states, one class providing the energy and the other reaping its benefits, can only be called into question by ideological perspectives that gain from seeing human history in as benevolent a way as possible for its participants in the lower classes. This misreading of history is such a powerful way of misinterpreting the present situation of what we shall show is wage slavery for the lower or working classes that it deserves a good looking over.

In general, we project to the future and tend to interpret the present in terms of past events and how they are interpreted. For example, whatever the good that came out of the rebellion of George Washington against his control by the King George British government of the 18th Century, the fellow did own slaves, lots of them, as did most of our revolutionary heroes,. Looked at objectively from the slaves' perspective, miserable bastards to the last of them, this was horrible. The point, though, is not to excoriate our beloved Founding Fathers. Rather it is to make clear that the Garden of Eden version of historical reality prominently promulgated ad nauseam in myth and especially for grade school children who have it drilled into their brains incessantly on threat of failure in test taking makes people think that as the past in America was nice, so is the present and the future. This extends to world history being assessed as a not so bad time for the lower classes, which constituted and still does upwards of 95% to 99% of the people.

Of course, mathematically developed or not, this idea is not new. The dreaded Karl Marx was the first to put the cultural evolution of slavery that extended unarguably from the ancient civilizations to the millennial long dominance of

serfdom into print clarifying the miserable times for all those under the yoke. Was Marx correct? To answer that question correctly we must differentiate Marx's statement of the problem from his prescription for the solution to that problem. Certainly recent history has shown that the abolishment of private property and rule by the dictatorship of the proletariat does not work. In that regard, Marx was not the best student of human nature. However, that does not mean that his spelling out of the problem was anything other than right on the money. This is not to cite Marx as an authority whose views should be accepted from that perspective. Rather we are citing Marx in fairness of being the first to clarify the rot of civilized existence in an organized way, the views of Rousseau and Voltaire on the subject notwithstanding. Now let us change the channel to look at modern America up close to understand as nothing but a culturally evolved form of slavery.



22. ORIGIN OF AMERICA'S EPIDEMIC DEPRESSION, LONELINESS AND MASS MURDER

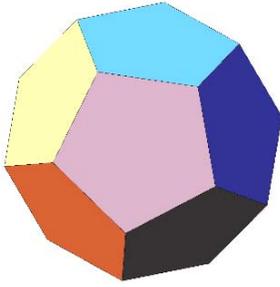
Cultural evolution is a funny thing. It means a lot, but tends to be seriously downplayed as we tried to make clear with the cultural evolution of slavery since the dawn of agriculture in the last section. American culture, as one might guess from the fact that we are an English-speaking country, evolved culturally from the English culture brought here by the vast bulk of settlers to our shores back a few centuries ago. Prior to the rise of American superpower dominance, aka empire, from our successes in the 20th Century's two world wars, the Brits owned or controlled the greater part of the world that was worth controlling. To say it lightly, British colonialism was all the rage for a couple of centuries. Now whatever the masking of the true horrors of this cross border enslavement of a good part of the world's people – the noble Brits had zero qualms against addicting tens of millions of Chinese to opium for profit – England was most basically a slave owning culture that derived great wealth and power from its control of "inferior" peoples.

That the sense of conquering “inferior” peoples for fun and profit lived on from our earliest times is evident not only in pre-Lincoln American slavery, disgustingly callous at best, but also in our ruthless usurpation of the land of the American Indians and their callous degradation, a visible horror unto this day if one cares to look closely at life on the reservation even at this late time.

This is not an effort to make American civilization or the colonial English forerunner form of it the worst of their kind in human history. Rather it is to make clear that as the latest form of people control for fun and profit, this what it is most basically as regards the welfare of the people in its lower classes, America’s effectively trivial improvements of the slave state notwithstanding. Now this is a mouthful and a half of condemnation that deserves closer examination before the Fox News assholes, and they are all such, every last one of them, condemn the analysis as disgustingly anti-American, God forbid.

That required closer look starts with the assertion that slaves have a shitty love life and an even shittier family life; and that the failure of love in these two areas of romantic love and family love is a mass producer of unhappiness. To make this clear I am going to start with an observation of a fellow I went to college with a few hundred miles from where my family lived. Oddly, Zack, not his real name, lived on the street but a block from my family home back at this time. Said Zack when we were musing in chit-chat whether Troy, NY was a good place to live, “If you have a girlfriend, anyplace you are is a good place; if you don’t, no place is a happy place to be. Mind you, this statement was not meant to apply to children or senior citizens, but to males of our species above the age of puberty.

That this statement is true however much it may cut against the grain of current psychobabble drenched ideology can be seen from the F fitness function of Eq142, $F = (b - d) - (b_R - d_R)$. That b birth rate function stays at zero if the male does not reproduce and as we tried to make clear earlier back in Section 8. Now as we also made clear, or should have if the point was somehow muddied, pleasure tends to be associated with having an individual $F > 0$ rating as is clear with the pleasure of eating and staying warm and winning in battle.



23. EPILOGUE

The emotional reward for aiming at a very valuable, very dangerous, near impossible goal, one that couples very high U uncertainty with a very high payoff, V in dollar terms, and a horribly great loss upon failure, v in dollar terms, is upon successful achievement of the goal as we made clear in the emotion sections the combined transition emotions of the UV thrill of winning and the Uv relief of escaping the penalty. Both of these feelings are intensely pleasurable as arises from the extremely large values of the variables in the $T=U(V+v)$ positively signed transition emotion for this positive outcome. This element of self-satisfaction is emotionally why people take on great tasks like trying to save the world from nuclear annihilation, loving people to the degree that you would sacrifice yourself for others not propitious for fitness outside of the others worked hard for being your family or of the world caring quest offering some personal joy in achievement of the success as personal payoff. So much for being accused of being faker stand-ins for Jesus. We are just human beings who recognize the horror of nuclear annihilation beyond our kids and revel in the supposition that there will be some form of personal reward that comes from saving the asses of the 7 billion fools under the gun.

To be clear, the combined positive/pleasant feeling in $T=U(V+v)$ is close to ecstasy, which is why, to repeat again, some people take on those level of quests. Generally speaking, when you want to talk a large group of people into following you in cooperative action, you are better off minimizing what you, yourself, will get out of it. Parents are thoroughly giving to their children without the need for recompense for the costs and risks. And people when they follow a leader like to have that thought about them if possible, whatever the difficulty in the leader actually having such a self-sacrificing attitude towards those he is about to help. Telling the truth of the reality of leadership with its promise of personal reward,

however potentially putting off followers joining, is the best, indeed only approach, in this time of everybody's utter mistrust of everybody else. While a good lie can get you far, in this time when everybody is lying or as a result in error in their way of thinking, only telling the truth in every way, and using pretty much unarguable mathematics to do it whenever possible, is the only way to go.

In that regard - of using mathematics to spell out the truth - there is tons more that can be said. I'll try to synopsise it here using as much of ordinary language to do it. We tried hard to make the point, though without putting in every data point needed to make the case for universality, namely that all processes in this finite world are feedback control processes. Given the RC circuit as the quintessentially smooth, top representation of First Order Negative Feedback Control, outside of the Second Order Feedback Control cyclic and stochastic/random processes that go on in the world, we should feel comfortable, especially after our feedback control spelling out of all chemical reactions, that all processes not Second Order cyclical or random in form are First Order Control and, therefore, take the same form as First Order, Kirchoff's Law, feedback control as firmly fits the RC and LR circuits of electronics.

Implied from this is that human behavior takes this form, that is, of our actively (or in the S-R, stimulus-response, mode passively) undertakes a goal like filling a capacitor with charges or of emptying one in a discharging RC circuit. More interesting than this restatement of control theory providing a universal underpinning for everything is the conclusion that can be extracted from it that the mind, our cognitive machinery, operates in accordance with electronic circuit relationships. Certainly many of our obviously emotion driven behaviors take this form. A significantly hungry person will tend to shove food in his mouth at a faster rate than one with just a middling appetite. And the rate of food shoving tends to go down as the gut is filled, much like the dq/dt current in an RC circuit being fastest when a charging circuit is first connected or closed and then slowing down as the progressive filling of the capacitor takes place. There is much more that can be said along this line of thinking, but having made the point that our mind acts like an electronic instrument such as a computer, something more than a few others have understood and said, rather than sketch this major point out with all the mathematical functions it deserves, I'd rather move on to an intuitive sense of

the behavior and thinking that derives from this math, but expressed for the most part in ordinary language.

The mind **thinks** with its generalizations. While first in evolutionary time came S-R behaviors, not goal directed but stimulus driven, in time we living organisms of the multicellular variety developed goal directed behavior based on generalizations of our experience. Let me back up a bit to explain this. We have most broadly speaking two distinct kinds of experience as derived from our sensed interactions with the outside world, our perceptions and our emotions. Breaking this down further, our emotions can be pleasant as brings about behavior directed to getting, keeping and/or making pleasant objects and doing pleasant things; or unpleasant as motivates behavior to avoid, expel and/or destroy unpleasant objects and avoid or stop doing unpleasant things. Generalizations that come from the experience of pleasure and/or displeasure from objects and activities are **value generalizations**, as include what people generally call morals, generalizations about what kinds or categories of things, objects or actions, are good or bad, pleasant or unpleasant, for us.

Such value generalizations are very important, whether they come from experience or what other people tell us, because they guide behavior in a very general way: Connect with the good stuff; and disconnect with the bad stuff. This is why food tastes good and is pleasant to eat. That emotional association of pleasure with the action tells you to do the activity that brings about the pleasure. And the same with the bad, as tells us why shit stinks, (potentially lethal bacteria in it) which “tells us” to stay away from it, to avoid it.

There is another very broad category of generalizations we also make from what we see and sense, of cause and effect, of what follows what in time. This is secondary to the primary set of generalizations, value generalizations, which give us the broadest dichotomy of behavior, to connect or to disconnect with something. What follows what, as in AB, the B thing following the A thing, is very important to have information on and make generalizations about.

This should be obvious when AB comes from nature, what we see rather than what we do. For if nature is providing a pleasant or good or evolutionarily fit B outcome that is preceded by A, then we will want to get, keep and or make A as well as B. Hence cause and effect relationships and our generalizations about

them are very important. Note that they can include what we do to get a good B outcome from an A object or event that precedes it.

Now it should be made clear that what science does is tell cause and effect relationships that potentially can bring about good/pleasant things and/or avoid bad/unpleasant things happening. Science is the master of cause and effect relationships because to a great extent it looks at or observes which things follow which in time. And you know it has to do this well because applied science as technology tells you what to do to generate a good outcome whether as producing something good or avoiding something bad.

Now note carefully the difference between these two kinds of generalizations: morality, what's good or bad; and science, what follows what in time as cause and effect. Two very important points must be considered. The first is that values, good and bad, pleasant and unpleasant, are not absolutes. They differ with living organisms depending on what end of an interaction you happen to be on. For the eagle, killing a squirrel is an evolutionary good, positive for its fitness. For the squirrel, not so good, to be cute.

For the slave master, owning slaves is better than just a bit good because of the economic benefit it confers on the slave master or owner. For the slave, the evolutionary fitness is entirely in the opposite direction, bad, which is why exploitive control feels bad for the slave and why it feels good for the master.

Explaining all this moralizing in today's highly controlled civilized societies that say otherwise by talking about good and evil in absolute terms requires a keen sense of the deceitful, doubletalk information that is fed to us 24/7 from birth to death. One thing we should understand is that once religion and ideology goes beyond value generalizations to cause and effect generalizations in order to convince its audience of what's good and bad, and does it in a way to buck up against alternative scientific explanations for things, it's bound to be nonsense. Which is what we have today, nonsense religious dogma, nonsense ideology, indeed on the left and right for both perform the same function if for different classes of people, to accept the status quo without erupting in a rage of revolution for the bastards above you in class destroying any possibility of real happiness in this one, short life you have to live. And psychology is just a fake science that is utterly

ideological in being as much shaped in determining values as it is cause and effect reasons, cognitive and behavioral, for things.

Let me give an important example of this. Just judging from average body size and strength relative to this difference between males and females in all vertebrate animals, dominance in courting behavior, be it brief or long-lasting, goes to the males. This fact is observable whatever the left ideology bullshit that male dominance in reproductive matters is a “bad” thing. Now to argue this outside of observation is to spin around the merry-go-round and never stop. And to argue this in terms of observation gets pretty difficult to do as the labelling of bad on any instance of male dominance is near universal these days as is the labelling of just about everything else, from female dominant to homosexual to single motherhood, as OK is also universal.

But we can go quite beyond our observation of animal courtship being vastly predominantly male dominant in nature and entirely universal with size and strength differences in the range of male and female humans. For other than fantasy borne Amazons, all, that is, ALL, aLL, All, **ALL** reproductive bonds are male dominant. Leftist ideology walks right past this along with not speaking a word about even the last 10,000 years of courtship relationships that preceded the last century.

From this observation I am going to preclude that the male dominant courtship mechanism is the genetic/instinctive one that has been hard wired into our psyches over the last few million years of primate evolution, the unusual environment bonobos notwithstanding. Now I am going to say that whatever the difficulties of a pair of would be lovers getting together in a way that persists happily, we are hardwired to perform this potentially difficult task with the male dominant in the relationship.

I say that as the starting point without continuing on with any argument why this is best because I want to make the case next of why this male dominant arrangement is so difficult to get in any lasting way in a slave society. This requires my first clarifying that the bolder males are the ones in any species who get to mate successfully, short term and long. And I want to point out that the bolder males are the ones who do not subordinate themselves to other males. Let me print that out: dominant males, ones not subordinate to others, get the horse

harems and the hippo harems and the lion harems, the winners in reproductive competition get the ladies, ask Jane Goodall about this if you feel the need to query an expert.

I was going to go through the reasons the male would take the dominant role as include protecting his children and his woman, who then would be able to devote most of her time to their upbringing, but the workday ideology would shout back that motherhood is passé or a drag these days. Rather than argue this I am just, from the prior arguments, making the supposition that reproductive love, sex included and centrally at that, is only continuously successful and long lasting with the male in the dominant role. And that all other forms are just a substitute for it in slave societies where the male is distinctly not cool and independent and very bold, either in his getting the female or in being successful in preventing her being screwed over by an interloper into the female, which every damn workplace boss most certainly is.

The modern male as wage slave is, thus, a jerk. And couldn't succeed at the strategy of rising to the top as a benevolent dominant to a female whom he devotes his life to being happy even unto his being willing to kill to defend and keep her. All other animals essentially do this, so don't think that prescription for it is nothing but romantic. Now let me jump to the worst part about this. And that is that all the substitutes for it, from female dominant to homosexual to bestiality, provide little success happiness wise, short term and more disappointedly long term, than is shouted out in the media, which shows male dominance to be invariably bad, and all other forms just swell (if you work hard enough at them!)

This is the main thing in life beyond the need to get rid of all the weapons in order to save you all from mass nuclear incineration. As long as there are significant power imbalances, which modern weapons make unavoidable, love, as fits your junior high pubescent fantasies that come from your genetic nature, is impossible. You have to get rid of the weapons, including in the hands of the police, which whatever their great PR are mainly there in order to protect the privileged predators above us in the ruling class, from the angry revolution these "let-them-eat-cake" purveyors profoundly deserve.

The opening lines of Dicken's "A Tale of Two Cities" tell us beyond the obvious fact that revolutions are ***the best of times*** in providing a quick flash of true

freedom and ***the worst of times*** in delivering punishment for rebellion on the order of torture in prison or execution, that they are particularly good things if you are young, for the young still have the good stuff left in their psyches for love to happen, as only it can in the civilized existence so cruelly and cleverly thrust upon us, when revolution makes it possible. And, trust me please, the sense of revolution that enables love lives on in *A World with No Weapons* where the weapons that make real freedom impossible, are banned in every which way that goes beyond the use of fists only to settle squabbles that natural selection, the natural competition of evolution, make impossible.

Kill the weapons and bring love back into life. That's a noble quest for individuals because without love life is shit. Ask Stephen Paddock, the Las Vegas shooter who had two failed marriages and little more than that with the casino Geisha Girl who was his last paid girlfriend. No pain worse than having no love. No joy greater than success in putting up the fight you need to get that love, so says Charles Dickens in his masterwork, *A Tale of Two Cities* and something I can personally attest to again and again from my own life.

To be analytical about it, the effect of culture boils down to how other people affect the emotions that drive a person's behavior. Culture does this in ways other than DNA underpinned instinct. No culture needs to make you or tell you to eat when you are hungry. Or to make love when you're in the grasp of lust. Though the need to rationalize one's failures in love has sold many a self-help psychology paperback in this fucked up era of workday slavery we live in that has been progressively expanded now into all hours' surveillance of domestic squabbling and intervention by the police. There are lots of tugs on boys not to break the rules of tradition and the law. Tugs of conscience inculcated in the obedient. Otherwise, people just follow their emotional instincts that aim them towards the evolutionary fitness optimization we made clear in the first few sections. The following few lines appropriate for this generalization come from a story a good friend of mine related to me a few years back. I'll start it in the middle.

It is noteworthy to get so angry at a mid-twenty's beauty for her haughtiness as to strike her in the face, and then to feel quite guilty for doing it, enough to feel that the ensuing breakup was all my fault, without a speck of thought of anything to the contrary. And have Miss Scotland, what

I called her for so she looked, come back a week later, ringing my door bell up on West 89th St. near Grant's Tomb on New Year's Eve at 2AM to tell me, to my surprise and, of course, delight, in this most darling Scottish brogue, "I thinks I love ya'." Now whatever the good and bad of it, and there was three months that followed of the very good, it taught me a clear, simple and important lesson, though I never took it up as a plotted strategy for both she and I were operating entirely on jet fueled instinct in this, that the girls just want to be firmly hugged, if not so harshly if possible, fuck you, Dr. Phil and all your professional and ethics adherents for trying to make Hello Dolly into an acceptable imitation of the real thing, which it is utterly and absolutely not and which you know if you've been lucky enough to have the experience of both true and fake love, dear Jesus!

It cannot be denied that it is helpful to have an honest male and an honest female's collaborative opinion in this matter. In that regard, read 50 Shades of Grey two more times in the bathroom, ladies. This joke should enable you to understand that much of civilized life *is* a joke and that a joke, what's ridiculous in appearance, is frightening once the audience for the joke stops acting like a child and laughing at something that has serious overtones, as most of what we laugh at in this culture, especially as inculcated via TV sitcoms and the like, *is*.

That is to say that perversions of instinctive behaviors restricted by inviolable, highly punishable, social rules are not just funny, though what we do laugh about, but also injurious to future socio-sexual success in their being inherently F fitness reducing, something all of you who were sensible enough to read the earlier evolution math understand thoroughly at this point. I'll skip the laborious logical math here that explains why actual non-TV adult people's faces in America are generally and at the same time, funny, unrevealing and scary enough were you to get close to them to keep you at a distance. Note also that this overall evaluation of the countless ordinary people in the country as "bad" not only makes you want to avoid them but also if you can't create the needed distance, to destroy them no differently than you instinctively want to kill a mosquito that you sense is bad for you, unpleasant if you allow it to be.

Hence, if that needs any repeating and further clarification, adult Americans indeed look potentially funny and scary enough to induce a mild paranoia, which

ambivalently suggests emotionally that you avoid or incapacitate/destroy it. And you have a lot of such funny looking faces in America. Just check out the faces of any conservatives. They're all either lit up Bozo the Clowns or pretty boy Ken Doll well spoken, short-haired drag queens. Or on a broader scale yet, check out the available videos of any of the Trump rallies.

Yep, there is going to be a revolution or major massacre soon started by the great mass of other gun nuts who swim in the same emotional stream as Sandy Hook's gun nut Adam Lanza and casino killer gun nut Stephen Paddock, those who conservatively obey their controlling authorities with hidden obsequiousness and hate the truly free to whom they direct their blind, redirected, hate as the only way they can stand life, and that is with a victim under them to abuse with excessive dominance and exploitive control, the perfect picture of H.G. Well's *The Time Machine*.

Any more clarification of the truth of our existence will get me in trouble, though, to be honest, fun trouble, as the release of my anger, against the sadist bastards above who deserve it. For revolution as done on deserving predators is as much fun as you can have in life outside of love and family, though they are a step above fun, following in sequence from the fun of beating your worst enemies off your back. Get it?! If you are bold, really life-risking bold, she'll see it, without the need for a slap in the face or any kind of violence on her to show her that you are bold.

Let's be analytical about this bold view on boldness. As Nobel Prize winner, Konrad Lorenz, points out at the end of his biosocial epic, *On Aggression*, from countless observations of animals in the wild, the greatest violence in nature occurs as reproductive violence between male animals of the same species. Why? The simplest zoological observation makes clear that **all** non-pathologically affected female animals reproduce with no hindrance. This is as opposed to less than half of male animals fathering offspring. And these are only the males of any given species that are successful in male-male often very violent reproductive battles.

This is in accord with healthy human males experiencing a distinct upshot spurt in aggressive and sexual drive at adolescence. These two behavioral repertoires are invariably associated with each other in nature because male reproductive battles

invariably proceed the reproductive payoff of getting a female of the species to mate with that goes to the winner. It should not be thought strange, then, that the frustrated aspiring male reproducer should be aggressively tuned up to an exaggerated degree by instinct. In that regard, and with a generous license to extrapolate the above conclusions for animals to the human animal, we may attribute Stephen Paddock's homicidal-suicide or suicidal-homicide to some extent to his failures with the cultural whore, geisha girl, women of today that fired up and directed extreme reproductive aggression in him on his generalized male competitors down on the concert floor and on the females that rejected him in his life.

Certainly this agony of reproductive rejection looms over the creep adolescent Adam Lanza at Sandy Hook and the adolescent killer at Virginia Tech and the adolescent killers at Columbine, and so on, etc., etc., etc., for so many of the "motiveless" mass murders that fly by us in the news every day we turn on the TV. It is an interesting thesis that the socio-sexual restrictions that lie at the center of civilized control of the male population, including the recently decreed torture deserving horrible sin of mating with a newly minted sexually mature adolescent female as is the rage for all primates and was the norm for the previous million years for man before the industrial revolution is responsible for the frustration and misery driven redirect aggression that hurts so many people every day, in the small and large, and drives groups to hate each other and make war on each other for little good reason.

And will eventually wind up in nuclear annihilation unless a large number of us get on the One World With No Weapons bandwagon fast. Make up your own card to become a card carrying member. And tell your friends about it.

A not well-publicized quote of the owner of one of the most successful casinos on The Strip in Las Vegas, Steve Wynn, is that he never knew anyone who walked away from Las Vegas a winner. There's a simple mathematical reason for that. The odds are against you in every casino game including slots. That doesn't mean that everybody loses when they're starting out. Rather, to illustrate with simple numbers, if the odds are 60-40 in favor of the house, 60% of gamblers lose right off the bat and 40% win.

The problem with the 40% who win at the start, though, derives from another simple mathematical dynamic called The Law of Large Numbers. In ordinary activity if you do something that gives a reward, of whatever kind, more than likely if you repeat the activity, you get more of the same, more rewards. And your expectation of this is hard wired into your mind as part of instinct or human nature. This is important enough to repeat and generalize. If things turn out bad with something you're doing, all things being equal, you'll expect that they'll continue to turn out bad so you stop what you're doing. And if things turn out good to begin with in whatever you may be doing, you expect that they'll continue that way, so you keep on doing what you're doing.

Unfortunately for hopeful gamblers, casino games are statistical beasts that don't behave that way. The Law of Large Numbers dictates, rather, that if you're fortunate enough to beat the house odds to begin with, stop playing because that instinctive urge to keep playing crashes head on into The Law of Large Numbers that says that if you keep playing a large number of times, eventually the outcome will fit the house odds against you, and you'll give back all you won to begin with – and then some!

Anecdotal evidence for this is near universal if you bother to take a poll of longtime Las Vegas gamblers. And with some, as we know from personal conversations, the initial win was big, over \$20,000, and the joker in the deck angry when it showed and high priced, "and I gave it all back, if you can believe it!" If you're a mathematical scientist familiar with The Law of Large Numbers, you have no trouble believing it, whatever the dark amazement of suckers who gave it all back.

Now why don't the casinos echo what Steve Wynn said years ago on CBS, 60 Minutes and what we're saying now to warn everybody from coming to Las Vegas and losing their money, more than a few some with enough hurt to jump off the roof of Mandalay Bay, or start putting bullets in 500 people. A digression now. The casinos and the cops the casinos utterly control aren't going to tell you about Stephen Paddock's significant losses shortly before the massacre, but the plain truth of it they are never going to tell you is that Paddock's motive for the kill was

to cause such bloodshed that, he reasoned, people would stop coming to Vegas and the casino business would collapse, his revenge on them. The epilogue to the slaughter, however, was that business didn't slow down a hair. Nobody cared half a shit for all the people who were murdered. None of the three casino executives we interviewed, at The D and El Cortez and a third we wouldn't dare mention its name for fear of having a hit put out on us, evinced the slightest touch of sympathy for the victims. And a month after the massacre, the take was the same. The tourists could have cared less who killed who as long as the blood was quickly sponged up and the bodies buried.

Anyway, excuse the digression, why don't the casinos tell the public not to gamble and lose their money like clockwork? Why doesn't Subaru announce to everybody in a special, truthful, commercial on TV that owning one of their automobiles is as likely to increase your love life and family happiness as wiping your butt with peanut butter coated toilet paper? Are you smart enough to generalize this?

The essence of the game played on you is that the promise of gambling success, by the implacable laws of statistics and human conditioning, is never to be delivered. Now what makes this impossible promise all the more attractive to suckers, to their hopes of great success, is the casinos' gross publicizing of the occasional short term big money winners, which are as sure to happen from the laws of statistics as everything else we just told you.

And that's life in modern civilization, what we've tagged as pseudo-democratic capitalism, also known as The American Dream. Basically the system works like a well-oiled machine controlled by those at the top for their interests with yours taken into consideration only to the extent that keeping the farm animal working class mildly happy and distracted with delusional expectations and juvenile entertainments makes them more productive. Anything and everything beyond that is beside the point or patently put on the restricted list, by tradition and/or law. This abstract specification of what's done to the worker class includes something all farmers know works well to keep rebellious, work-impeding aggressiveness down in their male farm animals, gelding or castration. For human

males, while it used to be physical for those directly under the pharaoh, his scribes and stewards, off with their nuts, today its psychological castration.

The various techniques employed on growing males, coercive and suggestive, makes jerks out of the men via their submission to their bosses. Pooh! say the women. Then weep, weep cry the men. As the sexes stupidly blame each other for the results of this grand clockwork castration that deems submission by men as nice and worthy of approval. And worse than this, if there can be worse, is a jerk male whose submission to his master nets him some power over others, over underlings of his own, in grand Daisy Chain fashion.

If you carefully examine animal nature, says the one of us who is a professional, PhD level biologist, you see that the male organisms almost universally compete with each other for the females to mate with. The female animals are significantly smaller and/or weaker than the males in this endless competition for evolutionary success, competition with the males by females taking place ONLY mildly sometimes as a test of male vigor. That is, kiddies, female resistance across the board is minimal. for the lady beasts are happy to mate reproductively with a vigorous male.

In human civilizations, though, the male's power is often not accompanied by natural vigor, that having been lost by his submission to his boss as was needed to get any semblance of power. This kind of hybrid male that comes about very much tends to turn the female off, especially right between her legs where it matters, in the end 99% of adult human males developing into socially stable jerks by the time they hit their mid-30s. This failure for men, the women thinking them and treating them like dirt-covered turnips, is much more catastrophically painful than is made public. It makes the guys unhappy deep down and only able to survive after the blade has crippled their privates and psyches, only with delusional expectations that include their belief, (for the truly craziest of the bunch), in a happy life AFTER DEATH, which is so biologically ridiculous as to make anyone who has such expectations be deserving of the worst kind of shaming and ridicule.

Worse yet than the unhappiness that individuals suffering from failed love feel, man or woman, is its artificial partial resolution by passing on their unhappiness to others by bullying, sadism, meanness and by murder and war. Really it's just an exaggerated extension of "kick the dog" when you're miserable. Another way to see **redirected aggression** clearly is to reflect on the phrase "in a bad mood." It means unarguably two things at once. That the person "in a bad mood" is unhappy at some level. And also to be prone to being unpleasant towards you to varying degrees. Hence, while we may and do sometimes feel sorry for somebody in a bad mood because they're unhappy by definition in that state, we also stay away from those "in a bad mood" because they're prone to being abusive to others when they're "in a bad mood." Do you need further proof of this redirected or misdirected aggression, of nasty behavior to others, often innocent victims, caused by the perpetrator feeling unhappy himself or herself?

Now look at the big picture. The unhappiness in life, most of it these days, is caused by control from the higher-ups of the lower-downs in capitalism including by its destruction from this control of people's ability to achieve love, romantic and family, the most important cornerstone of happiness in life. The rest of the reasons for this failure are pure BS. It's your boss's fault she doesn't love you, or whatever other authority has his boot up your butt. And, this point most important to be made even you don't give a fig about whether the next door neighbor has achieved love in his or her life, the unhappiness of failed love is highly prone to causing aggression when the unhappy soul has power over some poor bastard who wound up as his or her underling. And there's lot of these, the fake smiling faces on TV not to be counted excessively in the statistical sample. This failed love unhappiness is what causes those endlessly "motiveless" mass murders and collectively a large part of the wars that arise from our hate of people different than us, even if it isn't them that cause our miseries but the pigs high on the totem pole right here at home.

This problem, an unnatural screw-up in human genetic and cultural evolution, can only be solved by getting rid of the weapons that enable both the power of some to near completely control and enslave others and to kill in mass murder and war

so many at a time. And that starts with the formation of a one-world government, which by definition has no enemies of other nations because there are no governments on earth except it.

While that seems like a tall order, there is no other solution as I hope we will be able to make clear here. It must be done, so the only things to ask next is: How can it be accomplished? First of all everybody has to learn the math we worked out for you, learn it in one form or another to understand that the only alternative to beating all the swords into ploughshares is our having a brief World War III that ends with nuclear annihilation. How horrible do the short-term results of nuclear exchanges have to be to convince the leaders of the nuclear powers that they all have to give up some national autonomy to form a one-world government, one that has nobody to fight with? That's anybody's guess. But whatever the threshold of horror might be to make the problem clear, understanding the dynamic we have been trying to explain here should minimize horror and misery, however hard it has to be to wake people up.

For some nations to cooperate may require a revolution to take place in it, for some of the rulers so in love with power may not like the idea of giving it up. So active rebellion by the lower-downs against the higher-ups may be unavoidably necessary. We hope that this would be a democratic revolution in some form. But if not, whatever the cost it blood, revolution is worth the effort and its costs because it would be under the circumstances of the stupid leader laid out above the only way to get the job done, its costs far less than the nuclear incineration and fatal irradiation that is sure to come otherwise.

Then once you achieve the one-world government, as promised ahead of time, it has only two laws that it can enforce over the nations of the world or smaller city-states that will be sculpted out of them. And those are, upon punishment of death, no weapons for anybody to be owned or used, and no invading another's territory. These are the only two laws that the one-world government makes and enforces on the city-states, the most important of them that nobody, not even the police of a city-state, can own or use a weapons. You got a problem, you've got anger, use your fists. If you stoop so low as to use a weapon on another

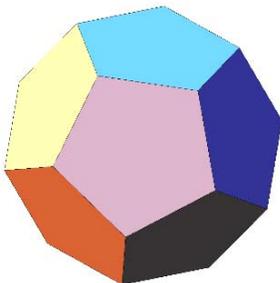
human being, you die. And that's it. Otherwise within the restraints in your own community (enforced without weapons), do whatever the fuck you like. Freedom is what's left, and whatever anybody's projected sense of what it would be, without weapons for some few to control the many, it would be a hell of a lot more freedom than we have now, enough to bring back the romantic and family love that happiness depends on that has dwindled down to pure fantasy at this point.

Fuck Heaven and all those who forcefully praise its impossible possibility. This plan is to get it, a significant chunk of it, while you're still alive and the bacteria have not eaten up the neurobiology that the experiencing of pleasure and happiness unarguably depends on. All of you lower-down people, wake up! And all of you higher ups, get smart and trade a bit of your bottom line for the focus and foresight necessary to see where this whole thing is going, nuclear annihilation, the last leg of this terrible journey of mankind, a problem for you and yours too.

All are forgiven who work to save the human race with this plan, for truly all's well that ends well no less than all's ill that ends ill if we blow this. We must risk our lives now to ensure that the worst does not happen.

This is the only way.

We are happy to supervise the effort.



24. MOLECULAR EVOLUTION

This very last piece shows evolution to be an entirely general process in nature as foolish to deny as $2+3=5$.

To understand evolution as a universal for all heterogeneous populations, we suggest skimming over the evolution of ***amorphous calcium phosphate***, ACP, to a ***crystalline calcium phosphate*** called ***hydroxyapatite***, HA. Some confirmation of the validity of our analysis is displayed indirectly below in the two-thumbs-up review of it a few years back by Dennis Sullivan, a noted American mathematician who received the National Medal of Science, 2004.



Mon, 27 Feb 2006 23:50

why not publish the part that explains Posner's data in terms of the logistical equation ...first... then do some of the rest next... etc... then as your acceptance takes hold do the more radical parts...as it is you may be pre-empting any real success by indulging your own deeply felt philosophy... by the way your explanations in the first parts were very clear....you may want to read how Einstein in similar and simple layman's terms

dispelled the notion of absolute time in the 1905 paper....and how he did it without being untoward...

good luck

dennis Sullivan

The ACP → HA phase change has been well studied in the literature because it is an *in vitro* analog of the transformation of immature bone and teeth to mature bone and teeth. The parallel to biological evolution as we have just considered in Eqs32-61 lies in the self-seeding, exponential nature of the molecular replication of the HA crystals.

The experiments centered about a precipitation of solid phase **calcium phosphate** from the mixing of calcium and phosphate solutions at high concentrations. The first precipitate obtained is the amorphous calcium phosphate, ACP, with formula, $\text{Ca}_3(\text{PO}_4)_2(\text{H}_2\text{O})_n$, where n is a variable number of hydrating water molecules. This initial calcium phosphate precipitate is said to be **amorphous** because of its diffuse X-ray diffraction pattern, which is more like that of amorphous liquids than of crystalline solids. The ACP molecules clump together in large spherical globules dispersed in a suspension of dilute calcium and phosphate ion mother liquor. This ACP transforms over time to a crystalline calcium phosphate called hydroxyapatite, HA, formula, $\text{Ca}_{10}(\text{PO}_4)_6(\text{OH})_2$, as simply represented as ACP → HA.

The ACP and HA molecules may be understood to transform into one another in a way that is mathematically similar to individuals of one biological population transforming into those of another during Darwinian natural selection. By that we mean that the solid molecules of ACP and HA can be understood to be born by precipitation events and to die via dissolution events. The ACP and HA populations have birth rates better known as **precipitation rate constant**, that of HA to be represented as b_1 and that of its rival molecular population, ACP, as b_2 .

And both ACP and HA have death rates better known as **dissolution rate constants**, that of HA represented as d_1 and that of ACP as d_2 .

The mechanism of the ACP → HA transformation was investigated over an extended period in kinetic studies done mostly in the laboratory of Aaron S. Posner, then Director of the Research Division of the New York Hospital for Special Surgery, Cornell Medical School, with findings relevant to our analysis published as:

Study I: (Eanes, E. D. and Posner, A.S.: Kinetics and Mechanism of the Conversion of Noncrystalline Calcium Phosphate & to Crystalline Hydroxyapatite) Transactions of the New York Academy of Sciences, 28, p. 233, 1965);

Study II: (Boskey, A. L. and Posner, A. S.: Conversion of Amorphous Calcium Phosphate to Microcrystalline Hydroxyapatite, Journal of Physical Chemistry, 77, 2313, 1973);

Study III: (Boskey, A. L. and Posner, A. S.: Formation of Hydroxyapatite at Low Supersaturation, Journal of Physical Chemistry, 80, 40, 1976)

In Study I, X-ray diffraction methods were used to obtain kinetic data for the ACP → HA transformation. Plots from study I of the amount of HA formed in the reaction vessel vs. the time of reaction are shown below.

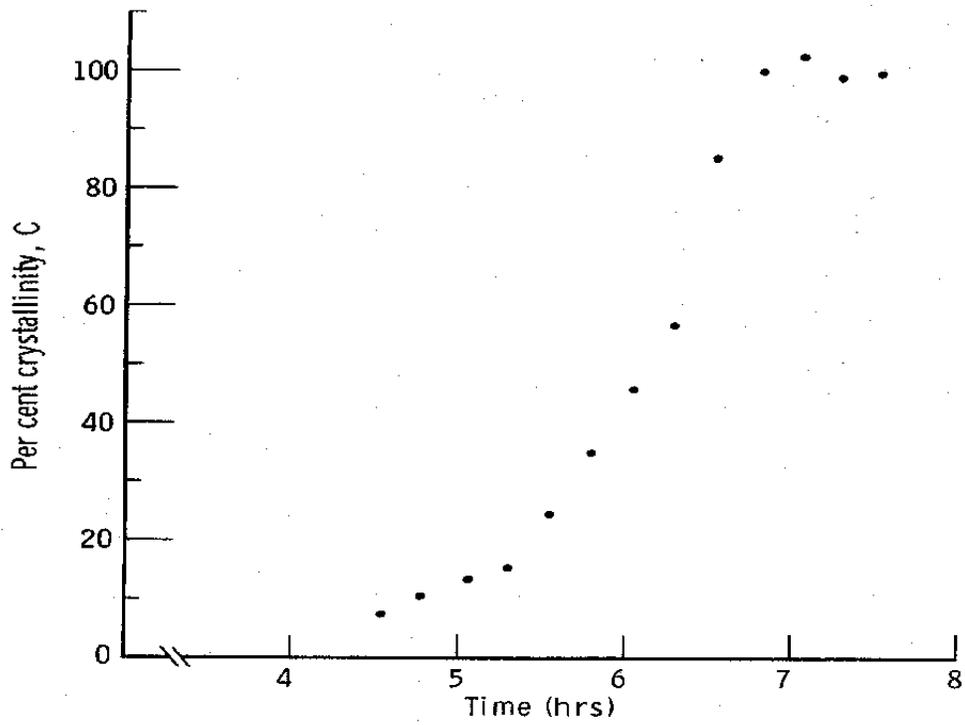


Figure 62. Concentration of HA vs. time in reaction system under condition of constant stirring. Concentration is expressed as percent crystallinity.

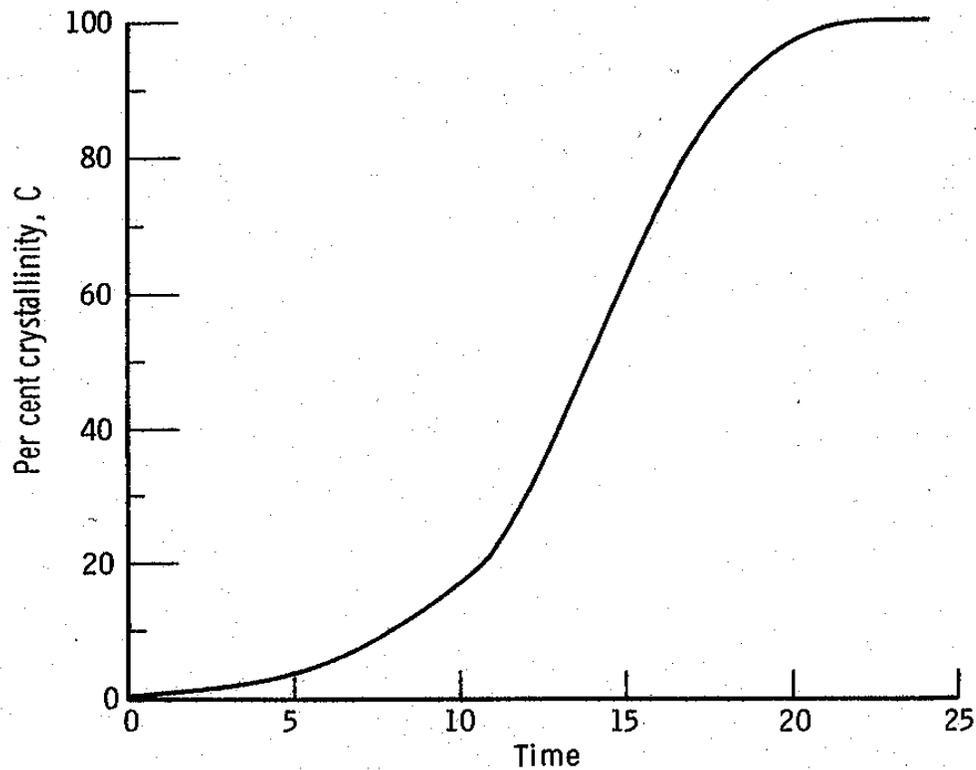


Figure 63. Concentration of HA vs. time in reaction system under static conditions. Concentration is expressed as percent crystallinity.

The sigmoid shape of HA growth in the linear plots of Figures 62&63 is clear and is also seen in another half dozen HA growth curves done in Study II. Also given in Study I is a logarithmic plot of the HA growth data of Figure 63.

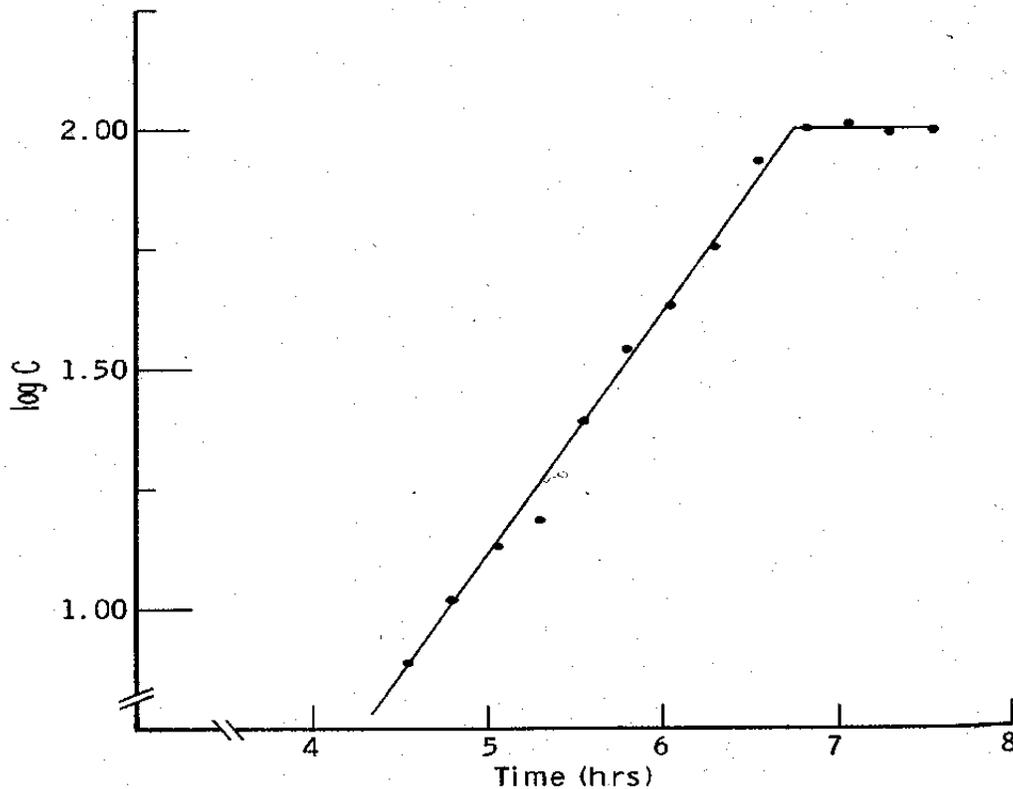


Figure 64. Logarithm of percent crystallinity vs. time for same data in Figure 63.

Study I derived a function for the ascending portion of the above plot, called the **proliferation period** of HA growth. From simple observation of the straight line seen in the plot, the authors took the functional relationship to be

$$(65) \quad \log C = kt$$

In the above C is the concentration of HA and k is an unspecified constant. From the above, Posner obtained the differential equation

$$(66) \quad \frac{dC}{dt} = kC$$

This is the governing kinetic expression for HA growth in the proliferation period. This expression indicates that the dC/dt rate of formation of HA at any time is proportional to the C concentration of HA already present in the reaction vessel. Such a mechanism of growth in which the rate of formation of a substance is

proportional to the amount already formed is called **autocatalytic**. This means that the growth of new HA derives from existing HA which acts as a seed or template for further HA growth. This mechanism for HA growth is operationally identical to biological population growth, whereby the rate of growth of new organisms, dx/dt , as seen in Eq6, $dx/dt=gx$, depends on the x number of existing organisms that act as seeds or templates for the production of offspring.

This conclusion from Study I was important in its physiological implications that bone, which is essentially HA, matures by an autocatalytic process that is biologically passive rather than active. However, their understanding of the ACP → HA transformation as represented by Eq65&66 is chemically naive and a bit misleading as to how the transformation takes place.

We show next the ACP→HA transformation they studied must take the form, rather, of the natural selection equations of Eqs58&60 and that the phase change process is just a kind of competitive process of molecular natural selection that is little different than what occurs for competing biological populations in the same niche.

$$(58) \quad \frac{dx_1}{dt} = \frac{F_1 x_1 x_2}{K}$$

$$(60) \quad \frac{dx_2}{dt} = \frac{F_2 x_1 x_2}{K}$$

The Posner understanding of the HA growth process as governed by Eq66 is an oversimplification because it takes into account only the proliferation period of HA growth, ignoring the final period of growth, the horizontal line part in the graph of Figure 64, which also needs to be considered to understand the true nature of the ACP→HA transformation. That their Eq66 does not describe the process accurately is clear when we consider a plot of C vs. t as solves Eq66, not specified in any of the Posner studies, which would be

$$(67) \quad C = C_0 e^{kt}$$

In the above, C_0 is an initial concentration or amount of HA, the source of which shall be clarified later. For present purposes, note that a plot of x vs. t for the

above function would be a simple exponential curve that increases without limit as for the exponential biological population growth depicted in Figure 36 rather than the sigmoid shape of the curve in the experimental data on the ACP → HA transformation in Figures 62&63.

Also, the ascending straight line that would be produced by a logarithmic plot of the C and t variables in Eq67 would rise without limit rather than flattening out as the experimental data of Figure 66 shows at t=6.5 hours. Hence the time equation of the Posner kinetics of Eq67 **does not** describe the process properly, that expression distorting the actual mechanism of the growth of HA from ACP, which, as we shall next make clear, is better described by an analog of the natural selection equation of Eq58.

The similarity of the sigmoid curve of the experimental HA growth curves of Figures 62&63 to the sigmoid curve of **logistical growth** of Eq54, which we said was the shape of the ascending (blue) sigmoid curve of **competitive growth** in Figure 53. This suggests that HA growth from ACP might be either a kind of logistical growth or a kind of competitive growth.

We decide between these two possibilities from the following argument. Chemical analysis in all three studies show the total amount or mass of solid phase calcium phosphate precipitate, whether as ACP or HA, to remain essentially constant during the ACP → HA transformation. Hence as the amount of solid phase HA increases over time as seen in Figures 62-64, the concentration of ACP must decrease concomitantly in what is essentially a zero sum game between the HA and ACP solid phases. Thus the ascending HA growth sigmoid curve in Figures 62&63 must be matched by a mirror image descending ACP sigmoid curve, one that would look very much like the descending (red) sigmoid curve in the competitive growth plot in Figure 53.

This similarity in Figures 62&63 (with the ACP sigmoid decrease penciled onto the graphs in your mind's eye) to Figure 53 points to a competitive growth explanation for the ACP→ HA transformation because the ACP→HA kinetic data then graphically fits the biological natural selection curve. This suggests that HA growth fits the natural selection expression of Eq58.

$$(58) \quad \frac{dx_1}{dt} = \frac{F x_1 x_2}{K} = \frac{(g_1 - g_2) x_1 x_2}{K}$$

This has the time evolution of Eq50.

$$(50) \quad x_1 = \frac{K x_{10}}{x_{10} + (K - x_{10}) e^{-(g_1 - g_2)t}}$$

And it suggests that the ACP molecular population changes in time according to Eq60 expressed as

$$(60) \quad \frac{dx_2}{dt} = \frac{F_2 x_2 x_1}{K} = \frac{(g_2 - g_1) x_2 x_1}{K}$$

This has a time evolution of Eq52.

$$(52) \quad x_2 = \frac{K x_{20}}{x_{20} + (K - x_{20}) e^{-(g_2 - g_1)t}}$$

To test the correctness of these equations derived for biological population growth as suitable for representing the ACP → HA transformation, we must consider the ACP→HA chemical transformation from a population perspective. That is, we must consider the HA as a **population** of HA molecules and HA growth as an increase in the number of HA molecules over time. And we must consider the ACP decrease as that of a **population** of ACP molecules that decreases in number over time.

To understand the changes in HA over time from this population perspective, we must convert the C concentration of HA into some directly proportional number of HA molecules, which we shall designate as x_1 . This conversion of variables from C concentration to x_1 number of HA molecules understands the 100% crystallinity of HA value in the experimental plots of Figures 62&63 as the **maximum number** of HA molecules, which exist at the end of the transformation reaction.

Taking for numerical simplicity the maximum concentration of HA at 100% HA crystallinity to be approximately 1/6 of a mole of HA and understanding there to be an Avogadro's Number of 6.023×10^{23} molecules in a mole, we take the maximum number of HA molecules at 100% HA crystallinity to be 10^{23} HA molecules. In parallel to the K maximum number of population #1 organisms in biological competitive population growth, we will understand this 10^{23} maximum number of HA molecules to be K in the above equations when they are taken to represent the $ACP \rightarrow HA$ transformation as a competitive growth, $K=10^{23}$ molecules.

We will also take this $K=10^{23}$ value to be the maximum number of ACP molecules. To do that, given the divergent stoichiometry of HA and ACP as $Ca_{10}(PO)_6(OH)_2$ and $Ca_3(PO_4)_2(H_2O)_n$ respectively, we must consider the ACP molecules three at a time, that is, as a triplet ACP form with formula written as $[Ca_3(PO_4)_2(H_2O)_n]_3$. Note that this triplet ACP, $[Ca_3(PO_4)_2(H_2O)_n]_3$, has no reality other than to provide a stoichiometric equivalent form to HA as $Ca_{10}(PO)_6(OH)_2$. Note that this ACP form and HA have the same number of six PO_4^{--} , phosphate ions, but that the ACP form is deficient by one Ca^{++} , calcium ion relative to HA.

Earlier we stated that the amount of solid phase calcium phosphate, ACP plus HA, remains appreciably constant in the transformation reaction over time. The above triplet representation of ACP allows us to understand the maximum number of these triplet ACP molecules as $K=10^{23}$ from the perspective of this triplet ACP and HA having the same number of PO_4^{--} , phosphate, ions in them *if* we can make the case that the Ca^{++} ion deficit in ACP relative to HA is corrected, is made up, by an uptake of Ca^{++} ions from the mother liquor as the $ACP \rightarrow HA$ transformation proceeds.

This is exactly what happens as shown in Study II, which shows that mother liquor Ca^{++} ion concentration decreases progressively as ACP is transformed to HA as indicates a progressive uptake of Ca^{++} ions into the solid phase during the transformation. This validates our stoichiometric simplification of ACP that allows K to represent the maximum number of (triplet) ACP molecules and the maximum number of HA molecules. And it also us to represent the sum of the number of (triplet) ACP molecules given as x_2 and of HA molecules represented as x_1 to be K at any time. Or in parallel to Eq47

$$(47) \quad x_1 + x_2 = K$$

This relationship between the number of (triplet) ACP and HA at any time also specifies $x_{10} + x_{20} = K$ function of Eq47 as valid for the ACP → HA transformation, which suggests that Eq50 is valid for it.

$$(50) \quad x_1 = \frac{Kx_{10}}{x_{10} + (K - x_{10})e^{-(g_1 - g_2)t}}$$

To test it, we next make a logarithmic plot for HA growth as it would be generated by Eq50. Using the parameters of $K=10^{23}$, $x_0=1$, (this $x_0=1$ representing a first HA molecule whose origins we shall make clear shortly) and $g_1 - g_2 = .8$ (whose basis in terms of ACP and HA precipitation and dissolution rate constants we shall also make clear shortly), we obtain the logarithmic plot of x_1 vs. time, t , for the above in Figure 68 as shown below.

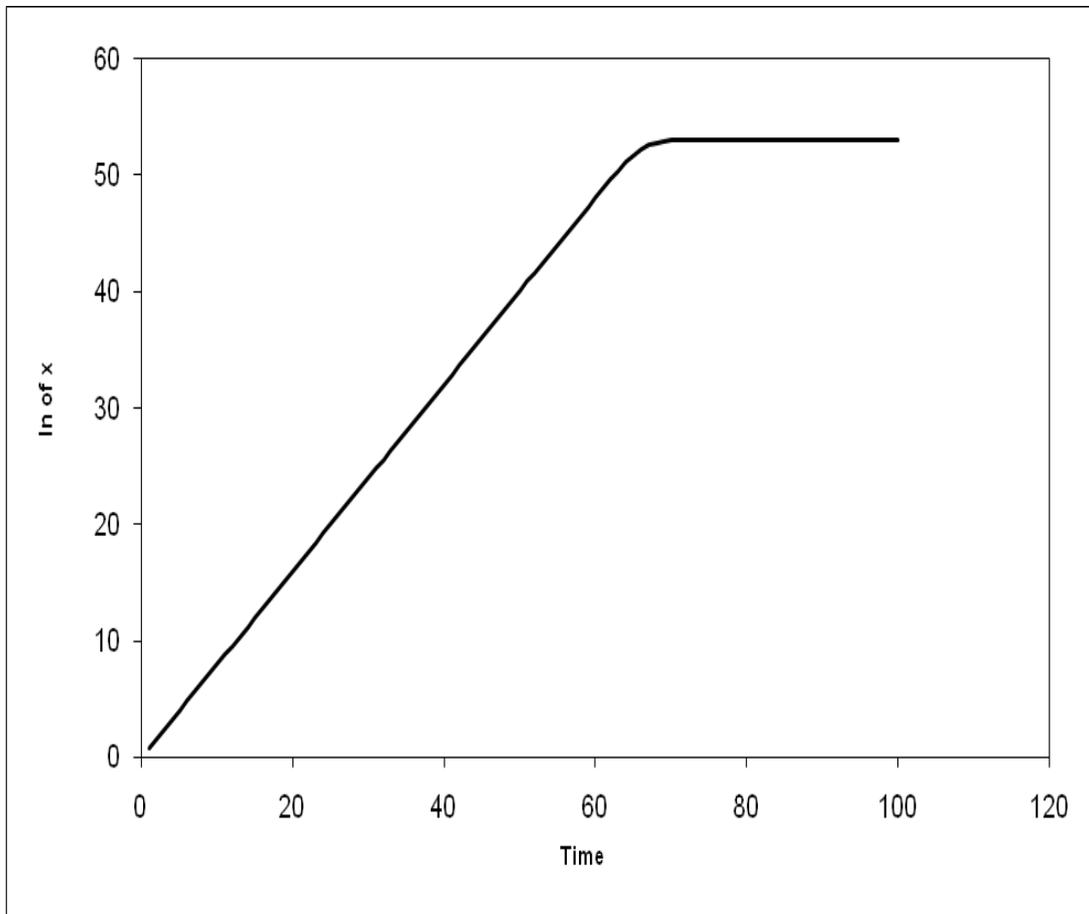


Figure 68. Theoretical Logarithmic Plot of HA Formation

The remarkable similarity of this logarithmic curve of HA growth hypothesized from the log plot of Eq20 to that of the experimental logarithmic curve of HA growth of Figure 2 indicates that HA growth may be explained by the differential equation form of Eq20, which is Eq28, And because Eq30 derives in a simple way from Eq28 for biological natural selection that it may correctly represent the time course of ACP decay in the ACP→HA transformation.

To understand the ACP → HA transformation as a selection process, we might try using Eqs28&30 for Darwinian selection with the fitness functions in the written out in terms their birth and death rates of Eqs59&61.

(69)

$$\frac{dx_1}{dt} = \frac{F_1 x_1 x_2}{K} = \frac{(g_1 - g_2) x_1 x_2}{K} = \left(\frac{b_1 x_1 x_2}{K} - \frac{d_1 x_1 x_2}{K} \right) - \left(\frac{b_2 x_1 x_2}{K} - \frac{d_2 x_1 x_2}{K} \right)$$

(70)

$$\frac{dx_2}{dt} = \frac{F_2 x_1 x_2}{K} = \frac{(g_2 - g_1) x_1 x_2}{K} = \left(\frac{b_2 x_1 x_2}{K} - \frac{d_2 x_1 x_2}{K} \right) - \left(\frac{b_1 x_1 x_2}{K} - \frac{d_1 x_1 x_2}{K} \right)$$

To use these to understand the ACP→HA transformation, we understand the birth and death rates as precipitation and dissolution rate constants, the b_1 and b_2 terms as the precipitation rate constants respectively of HA and ACP molecules and the d_1 and d_2 terms as their **dissolution rate constants**. The birth and death rates of real biological populations change in time, the functions we use in the equations being averages of them. This causes realistic competitive growth of biological populations to not be the smooth dynamic specified by the idealized Eqs 50&52 and Figure 53.

On the other hand, there *is* a tight fit of the ACP→HA kinetics to the natural selection curves because the precipitation and dissolution rate constants **do not** change in time. Further these molecular populations have a combined total population on the order of $K=10^{23}$, which is so large as to remove all stochastic irregularity from the dynamics of the system via the law of large numbers.

But even this interpretation of the birth and death rates as precipitation and dissolution rate constants, Eqs 69&70 are not perfect representations of the calcium phosphate ACP→HA transformation. The functional dependence of the dx_1/dt rate of formation in Eq 69 on the $b_1 x_1 x_2 / K$ term is entirely reasonable because it fits the self-seeding, autocatalytic, basically exponential, dynamic of HA crystal growth and crystal growth generally as a templated replication. This understands the dx_1/dt dependence on $b_1 x_1 x_2 / K$ to arise with x_1 as the number of template or seed crystals and the x_2 number of ACP molecules as the reservoir of solid state calcium phosphate needed to produce the HA crystals. This functional relationship is most obvious when all the ACP needed to make HA is used up, $x_2=0$, which causes the HA growth reaction to cease, $dx_1/dt=0$, as seen in the laboratory data. The reasonableness of dx_1/dt measured HA growth as determined by $b_1 x_1 x_2 / K$, by parallel to the templated replication in biological

growth, also validates the dependence of dx_1/dt on the dissolution of HA molecules as represented by the $-d_1x_1x_2/K$ term in Eq69.

The growth of ACP measured by dx_2/dt in Eq70 as proportional to $b_2x_2x_1/K$, however, presents a problem because it suggests that the rate of precipitation of ACP is proportional to the x_2 number of existing ACP molecules and that this precipitation of ACP is, thus, self-seeding or autocatalytic as is the growth of HA. But that is very much not the case, for there is no evidence that ACP is a templated replication, which is in confluence with the fact that ACP is not a crystalline solid but amorphous.

Rather the dx_2/dt precipitation rate of ACP is proportional to $x_2^{(2/3)}$ as indicates that its precipitation is proportional to the **surface area** of the large ACP globules suspended in the mother liquor. The evidence for such a surface mediated ACP precipitation is obtained indirectly from an understanding of the rate of formation of the initial HA crystals in the ACP \rightarrow HA transformation being proportional to the surface area of the ACP agglomerates as was shown in a thermodynamic analysis done by Peter Calabria.

Calabria, P. V., A Kinetic Study of the Heterogeneous Nucleation of Hydroxyapatite on Amorphous Calcium Phosphate Particles, PhD Thesis, Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, Troy, NY, 1980

Calabria, P. V. and Katz, J. L.: The Kinetics and Mechanism of Heterogeneous Hydroxyapatite Nucleation, International Association of Dental research Abstracts, Abstract # 448, 1970

Verifying visual proof of the formation of the first HA molecules on ACP surfaces was also obtained from scanning electron microscope micrographs in a study which cites Calabria as the first to propose mechanism.

Brecivic, Lj. and Furedi-Milhofer, H.: Precipitation of Calcium Phosphates from Electrolyte Solutions, Calcified Tissue Research, 10, 82, 1972

The molecular picture that we have, then, of the formation of the very first HA molecules is of a repeated precipitation of calcium phosphate on the surface of the large ACP agglomerates, most of which precipitations are of ACP, but some rare few of which have by chance solidify in the highly ordered configuration of HA crystals. This is how the first HA molecules are formed. Once the initial HA

molecules are formed in this way, the remainder of the HA molecules form by the crystal self-seeding mechanism described above.

This understanding that the first HA molecules form at a rate in proportion to the ACP surface area implies that all calcium phosphate precipitation is mediated or catalyzed by the surfaces of the large ACP globules suspended as colloids in the mother liquor and, hence, that the dx_2/dt rate of ACP precipitation is proportion to the ACP globule **surface area**. This surface catalysis of solution phase ions to solid phase precipitates is in conformity with general physical chemical theory. As surface is proportional to mass raised to the 2/3 power and the mass of ACP is directly proportional to the x_2 number of ACP molecules, we understand the dx_2/dt rate of formation of ACP molecules to be proportional to $x_2^{(2/3)}$.

We can also understand the dissolution of ACP particles back into solution as taking place at a rate in proportion to the surface area of the ACP globules because their ACP surfaces are the physical interface between solid phase ACP and the mother liquor solution phase into which the ACP dissolves. This has us understand the rate of dissolution of ACP molecules back into solution as also being proportional to $x_2^{(2/3)}$, which requires that we alter the $-d_2x_1x_2/K$ term in Eq38 to $-d_2x_1x_2^{(2/3)}/K$. These reductions of x_2 to its 2/3 power alter the kinetic equations for the ACP→HA process from Eqs69&70 to

(71)

$$\frac{dx_1}{dt} = \left(\frac{b_1x_1x_2}{K} - \frac{d_1x_1x_2}{K} \right) - \left(\frac{b_2x_1x_2^{(2/3)}}{K} - \frac{d_2x_1x_2^{(2/3)}}{K} \right)$$

(72)

$$\frac{dx_2}{dt} = \left(\frac{b_2x_1x_2^{(2/3)}}{K} - \frac{d_2x_1x_2^{(2/3)}}{K} \right) - \left(\frac{b_2x_1x_2}{K} - \frac{d_2x_1x_2}{K} \right)$$

The difference between the molecular selection in Eqs71&72 versus Darwinian selection in Eq69&70 as regards the 2/3 power of the #2 population size in the

former does not detract from the primary generalization we are making about all selective processes being controlled by differential birth and death rates. We have seen that for two processes now, Darwinian selection in biological systems and molecular selection in chemical systems.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Brian Lavelle <Brian@MyWNB.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 2:41 PM
To: Council Packet
Cc: Phil Euler (peuler49@gmail.com)
Subject: Euler Rentals LLC Letter of Support
Attachments: Euler Rentals LLC App #SP20013.pdf

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

To Lincoln Council Members,

Attached is a letter of support for the above. It is on Application Number SP20013 for Prairie Hill Place.

Thanks for your consideration.

Brian Lavelle
CEO
Western National Bank



Main Bank: PO Box 367 ● 523 Thayer Ave ● Chester, NE 68327 ● (402)-324-5444 ● Fax (402)-324-8784

Branch: P.O. Box 6 ● 401 Main Street ● Summerfield, KS 66541 ● Phone (785) 244-6211 ● Fax (785) 244-6256

Branch: P.O. Box 485 ● 415 South High Street ● Cairo, NE 68824 ● Phone (308) 485-1111 ● Fax (308) 485-1113

Branch: P.O. Box 146 ● 115 Kansas Street ● Byron, NE 68325 ● Phone (402)236-8626 ● Fax (402) 236-8600

July 6, 2020

Dear Council Members,

I am writing this letter to support Phillip Euler's Prairie Hill Place development project located at S 46th and High Street in Lincoln. Phillip has involved me in this project the last several years. It is the intention of Western National Bank to provide all of the necessary financing to complete the project if approved.

Phillip will do an excellent job on this project based upon my experience working with him the last ten years and based upon his real estate investment and engineering background.

Sincerely,

Brian Lavelle
CEO
Western National Bank



Angela M. Birkett

From: Geri K. Rorabaugh
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 2:24 PM
To: Bruce Prenda
Cc: David R. Cary; Steve S. Henrichsen; Tom J. Cajka; Jeff R. Kirkpatrick; Brad Marshall; Tim S. Sieh; Soulinnee Phan; Ischumacher@lincolnfed.com; Brenda J. Thomas; Council Packet
Subject: RE: Appeal - Special Permit 20016 adopted by Planning Commission Resolution PC-01709

Mr. Prenda,

Thank you for your email relating to your inability to attend the July 13, 2020, City Council hearing on the above-referenced special permit. Unfortunately, this matter had first reading before the City Council on June 29 and is scheduled for public hearing on July 13, 2020, at 3:00 p.m. I am forwarding this information to the City Council for their review and consideration.

If you have further questions, you may want to contact the City Clerk's Office at 402 441-7437.

Thank you,

Geri Rorabaugh

Administrative Officer
Lincoln-Lancaster County Planning Dept.
402 441-6365

From: Bruce Prenda <bjprenda4@gmail.com>
Sent: Friday, July 3, 2020 12:36 PM
To: Geri K. Rorabaugh <grorabaugh@lincoln.ne.gov>
Cc: David R. Cary <dcary@lincoln.ne.gov>; Steve S. Henrichsen <shenrichsen@lincoln.ne.gov>; Tom J. Cajka <tcajka@lincoln.ne.gov>; Jeff R. Kirkpatrick <JKirkpatrick@lincoln.ne.gov>; Brad Marshall <bmarshall@olsson.com>; Tim S. Sieh <TSieh@lincoln.ne.gov>; Soulinnee Phan <SPhan@lincoln.ne.gov>; Ischumacher@lincolnfed.com; Brenda J. Thomas <BThomas@lincoln.ne.gov>
Subject: Re: Appeal - Special Permit 20016 adopted by Planning Commission Resolution PC-01709

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Ms. Rorabaugh,

Thank you for consolidating the hearings. Unfortunately, I am ordered to be in a felony jury trial as counsel from July 9 through July 15 and I will be unable to appear before the City Council on my appeal on the 13th. For information purposes, I am awaiting a response from Brad Marshall following a call and discussion we had several weeks ago. I have not been contacted by a Lincoln Federal representative to discuss this. Without the opportunity to discuss my specific concerns with them to an amicable resolution, I am not able to take action on my appeal and must ask to reschedule it. Please let me know if you or anyone else with an interest in this matter need anything further from me. I am available by email or phone anytime. Thanks for your attention to this. BP

On Fri, Jun 19, 2020 at 11:16 AM Geri K. Rorabaugh <grorabaugh@lincoln.ne.gov> wrote:

Mr. Prenda,

I am in receipt of your appeal dated June 18, 2020, which was retrieved from our dropbox today, June 19, 2020, relating to the above-referenced application adopted by the Planning Commission on June 10, 2020. Please note that this matter will be scheduled before the City Council for public hearing on July 13, 2020, at 3:00 p.m.

In addition, there is an associated Change of Zone 20016, which is scheduled for public hearing before the City Council on June 29, 2020. I am requesting that the applicant make a request to Sony Phan in the City Clerk's Office requesting that this public hearing be delayed from June 29 to July 13, so that these two requests can be heard together.

Please let me know if you have any questions.

Thank you.

Geri Rorabaugh

Administrative Officer

Lincoln-Lancaster County Planning Dept.

402 441-6365

CONFIDENTIALITY NOTICE: This e-mail message, including any attachments, is for the sole use of the intended recipient(s) and may contain confidential and privileged information. Any unauthorized review, use, disclosure or distribution is prohibited. If you are not the intended recipient, please contact the sender by reply e-mail and destroy all copies of the original message.

City Councils

America has decided that racial inequality is unacceptable and that police brutality is a crime. We ask only for the equality the law pretends to give minorities. I ask that you consider strengthening accountability mechanisms such as the Citizen Police Advisory Board and other organizations. Note that any response is critical during this troubled time.

Sincerely,

Anna Grace Hilton

June 30, 2020

TO: Members of Lincoln City Council, Lancaster County Board

RE: Recommendation for Independent Police/Law enforcement Oversight

These are times of great upheaval, sadness, but also renewed hope. Our young men and women have risen up to accomplish what our previous generation began.

As long time residents, active senior citizens, and sometimes social activists, we would like to share our recommendations regarding police reform. Our luncheon group was begun about 20 years ago by Lela Shanks and Marcella Foster, and they were soon joined by Leola Bullock, all of blessed memory. We have met weekly to discuss and seek solutions of local, national and international problems.

We have no official standing, but do possess many years of experience and wisdom gained from Lela, Leola and life. We consider this a time to join our voices with the millions both nationally and locally who seek better policing policies, police relations with the community, legal protection of citizens, and a lessening of institutional racism at all levels.

We commend our local authorities, including law enforcement ,for addressing policing issues: choke holds, de-escalation of interaction, militarization of policing, training issues, recruiting minorities and women to law enforcement, and improving police-community relations.

What we would like to add was eloquently voiced by Marshall Lux in his Local View "Police need real oversight. (LJS , 6/9). He wrote, **"...perhaps the most important reform, something that is long overdue, would be to establish in law, meaningful external oversight of our policing agencies."** He continues, **" Unfortunately, most local police agencies are not subject to anything like the independent oversight necessary to respond to and investigate citizen complaints about police misconduct."**

Fortunately, Lincoln and Lancaster County have much better than average police community relations and the establishing of a task force to improve policing policies in Lincoln is a good idea. But if we are intent on eliminating "bad apples," independent oversight of those agencies is needed.

We trust you will find these recommendations for change both informative and consider putting them on your agendas for serious consideration.

Thank you for your commitment to fair enforcement of the law and racial justice in the past. Today we are engaged in an educational and social change moment. Please consider these recommendations.

Thank you.

Respectfully,

Dewayne Mays, President of Lincoln Chapter of NAACP

Kathleen Rutledge, Retired Editor of Lincoln Journal Star

Paul Olson, Board Member of Nebraskans for Peace and Emeritus UNL Professor

Jo Henderson, Retired Supervisor of Manuals for the Nebraska Department of Social Services

Jean Krejci, Retired Medical Anthropologist and Counselor Lincoln-Lancaster Health Dept

John Krejci, Emeritus Professor of Sociology/Social Work , Nebraska Wesleyan

Jeraldine Mays, Retired LPS teacher

Rheta Johnson, Retired Construction Analyst HUD

Becky Handsaker, Retired USDA

Loretta McWilliams-Russell, Third generation African American Lincoln resident Retired USDA
Development

Police need real oversight

The core responsibilities of government are to maintain public order and to provide justice. The interrelationship of these responsibilities have been brought into sharp focus by the death of George Floyd at the hands of incompetent, and arguably homicidal, Minneapolis police officers on May 25.

The problem is that we cannot have true order without justice; and when there is a grotesque failure of justice, as in Mr. Floyd's case, it can lead to serious problems for public order.

As the smoke (literally) clears, we must turn to the practical issue of what needs to be done to finally, and belatedly, reform policing in our country to prevent the kind of injustice that was committed in Minneapolis. Ob-



MARSHALL LUX

viously, there are many areas of reform that need to be addressed — training, hiring practices, leadership, “police culture,” emphasis on “community-based policing,” etc.

But perhaps the most important reform, something that is long overdue, would be to establish, in law, meaningful external oversight of our policing agencies. Having served as Nebraska's ombudsman for nearly 40 years, I can attest that truly independent oversight of governmental agencies can be an effective tool in exposing those public employees who misbehave, and in helping to establish a better culture in those agencies when it comes to their interaction with the public.

Unfortunately, most local police agencies are not subject to anything like the independent oversight necessary to investigate and respond to citizen complaints about police misconduct. As we have seen from the tragic case of Mr. Floyd, the lack of that inde-

pendent oversight can have tragic consequences.

For the most part, local police agencies have stubbornly resisted attempts to establish meaningful independent police oversight. Take Omaha as an example.

In 2000, the city of Omaha established an independent police auditor to investigate citizen complaints against the Omaha police. But the OPD vigorously objected to independent oversight and demanded that the department itself should have exclusive authority to investigate complaints against Omaha police officers.

It was no surprise that in 2006 Omaha Mayor Mike Fahey fired the police auditor after the auditor released a report criticizing OPD's handling of traffic stops. Since then the only avenue for following up on complaints against OPD officers has been through the department's own Internal Affairs Unit. Obviously, that arrangement does not constitute anything like true “independent oversight” of the department and its officers.

The situation in Lincoln is better ... but only slightly. In addition to the LPD Internal Affairs Unit, Lincoln has a mayor-appointed Citizen Police Advisory Board to respond to citizen complaints against the Lincoln police. However, the board only meets quarterly and does not have its own independent agents to investigate citizen complaints against Lincoln police officers. This means that the board is compelled to rely on the information that LPD gives it, and the result, in practical terms, is oversight that is not as robust as it needs to be.

The announcement of a new task force to develop policy changes to improve policing in Lincoln is a good idea, but it is essential that the participants understand the importance of this oversight piece.

If we are truly committed to

identifying any “bad actors” in our police agencies, those prone to abusing their authority, then we need to have specialized independent oversight of those agencies.

Ideally, this means having an oversight entity that is totally independent of the police agency itself and as insulated as possible from political interference.

It is also essential that this oversight entity be adequately staffed and have the genuine investigative powers needed to get at the truth when investigating citizen complaints against the police.

Back in the 1990s Minnesota had an independent crime victims ombudsman whose responsibilities included investigating complaints against Minnesota law enforcement agencies. But the Minneapolis Police Department was “uncomfortable” with any arrangement where they would be subject to truly independent oversight.

Predictably, in 2002 the Minnesota crime victims ombudsman was eliminated, and the responsibility for handling citizen complaints against the police was transferred to the state's Commissioner for Public Safety, a political appointee who would, it was assumed, be inclined to be more “sympathetic” to the police in oversight efforts.

As for Derek Chauvin, the first Minneapolis police officer charged in Mr. Floyd's death, he reportedly had 18 prior complaints filed against him with the Minneapolis PD's Internal Affairs office, but records of those cases seem simply to have disappeared into the back of a Police Department filing cabinet until after Mr. Floyd's death. I guess we can see how well that worked out for George Floyd and the people of Minnesota.

Marshall Lux was Nebraska State ombudsman from 1981 to 2018.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Phillip Euler <peuler49@gmail.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 09, 2020 2:19 PM
To: Council Packet
Cc: christie@sst-neb.com; Dan Rosenthal
Subject: Prairie Hill Place CUP, Comments on Appeal of Application SP20013 Approval by Planning Commission June 10, 2020 (vote 6-0)

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Council Members,

I am writing to provide you with some additional information related to the Public Hearing, July 20, 2020, 3:00 PM for Appeal(s) filed by 12 owner-occupied property owners from the list of 62 property owners notified.

First, below is a table showing the analysis of the ownership of the 63 properties. It is separated by those “opposing” and those “not opposing” including those supporting the Application for development. The table also shows the number of lots (properties) involved and the ownership thereof.

CUP Mailing List Analysis SP20013					
		Lot Owners		Number of Properties	
	Landlords not commenting	18	95%	17	
	Landlords supporting	1	5%	14	Eul
	Landlords opposing	2	10%	5	Ch
	Total Landlords	21	100%	36	
	% Landlords of Notified	44%		57%	
	Homeowners not commenting	12	44%	12	
	Homeowners supporting	3	11%	3	Spe
	Homeowners opposing	12	44%	12	
	Total Home Owners on List	27	100%	27	
	% Homeowners of Notified	56%		43%	
	Total Owners / Properties Notif	48		63	not

Of the 48 notifications sent by the Planning Commission to property owners, 21 (44%) are Landlords, (some with multiple properties) and 27 (56%) are occupying homeowners (first column). Of the 21 Landlords 18 did not comment, 1 commented in support and 2 in opposition.

The 21 Landlords own 36 (57%) of the 63 properties, the balance are 27 homeowner occupied properties (middle column). Of the 63 total properties in the area, 31 (17+14) Landlords plus 15 homeowners support or did not comment on the CUP application.

Therefore 86% (far right column) of the Landlords and 56% owner occupied homes do not oppose the CUP. ***All together 73% of the property owners don't oppose the Application.***

An analysis of the Appeal forms filed in opposition is show in the table below.

Appeal Forms Analysis SP20013						
Count	Name, Last	First	Address		Resident Address	Property Relations
1	Cest	Becky	3350 46		4831 Mandarin Cr	Owner
2	Cest	Sullivan			2962 South	Daughter of B. Cest
3	Brewster	Jim	3214 46		same	owner
4	Betanin	Ben	3215 48		same	tenant
5	Brehm	Bradley	3215 48		same	tenant
6	Karthauser	Kyle	3225 46		same	Owner
7	Kleaver	Del	3328 46		same	Owner
8	Selzer	Nancy	3229 48		same	Owner
9	Currie	Jolene	3351 48		same	owner
10	Currie	Dwayne	3351 48		same	owner
11	Nielsen	Janice	3404 46		same	tenant
12	Terry	D Elizabeth	3427 48		same	Owner
13	Terry	Brian	3427 48		same	Owner
14	Ehrenberg	Tyler	4604 Hillside		same	tenant
15	Bro	Linda	4625 High		same	owner
16	Bro	Ken	4625 High		same	owner
17	Czolgos	Margret	4628 Hillside		same	owner
18	Czolgos	Larry	4628 Hillside		same	owner
19	Sobotka	Terry	4635 High		same	owner
20	Carlson	Stephan	4636 Hillside		same	owner
21	Carlson	Brooke	4636 Hillside		same	owner
22	Green	Tracy	4706 Hillside		same	tenant
23	Royal	Ray	4706 Hillside		same	Owner
24	Scheele	Tom	4716 Hillside		same	Owner
25	Lingle	Tamera	4738 Hillside		same	Owner
	Totals					
	% of Total					
	% of owners of record					

Of the 25 Appeal forms submitted in opposition only 12 represent owner-occupied properties in the CUP area. Four are tenants with no ownership standing, 2 are

Landlords and 1 is family of one of the landlords. These 12 are shown in the first table ***“CUP Mailing List Analysis”*** as “Homeowners opposing.”

The letters attached to two of the Appeal Forms discuss low-income housing reduction if the CUP is approved. However this is not the case.

Using HUD estimates of rents compared to a southeast Lincoln registered low-income housing apartment complex, **The Lodge**, 4600 Briarpark, (just south of HW 2 on Old Cheney), their rents for 1 to 3 bedroom units are between \$620 and \$995.

The 16 lots in ***Prairie Hill Place - Phase One Application (CUP phase 1)*** include 8 existing single family or duplex homes and 8 new single family lots to be made available.

The existing 8 properties in the CUP- Phase 1 are currently rented by *Euler Rentals LLC* and include 3 duplexes with 1, 2, and 3 bed rooms. These 6 units rent today for between \$430 to \$930 per month.

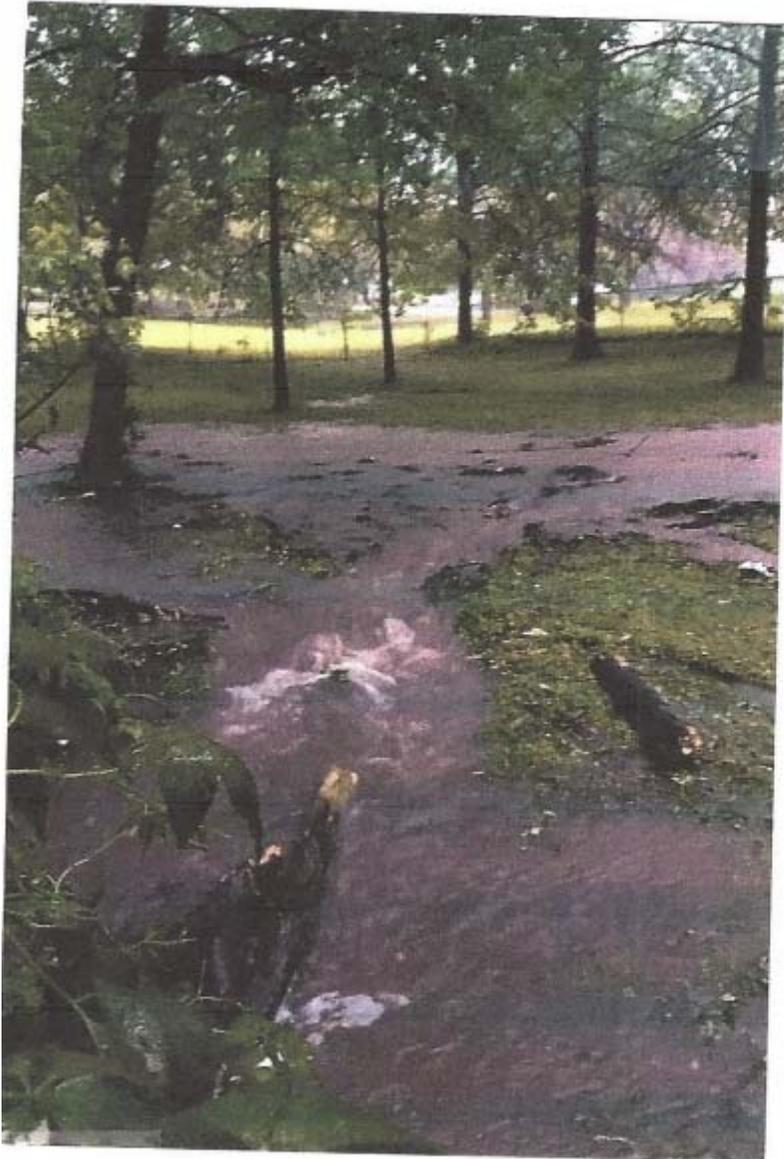
The other 5 single family homes that are 3, 4 and 5 bed room properties rent for between \$880 to \$1200 per month.

Compared to **The Lodge** with rents of between \$620 to \$995 all of these existing CUP properties are currently at rents within **The Lodge** low-income rental range for similar size units. *EulerRentals LLC* plans to continue to offer these 8 rental properties at similar rent levels. So with approval of the CUP there will be no reduction in affordable units available.

A concern of the neighbors in opposition is the potential impact related to storm water and flooding. I have owned property in the area for 34 years and have seen large impoundments of water at the south end of the area. From my observation this was exacerbated by two things. First there were no significant barriers to slow the flow of water between Hillside and High St. where a 15” collection tube resided. Secondly, the unattended tree stand consisting mostly of voluntary trees and bushes resulted in large amounts of broken branches and other debris to flow to the entrance of the collection tube. This debris often would clogged the tube entrance and flow in to the drain tube. In about 2017-18 the City Utility crews were successful in removing a large amount of debris (including a large tree branch) from the south collection tube. In 2019 the City installed a new catch basin and connected it to a larger storm water tube at High Street. Since then the water

backup in the south end area has diminished greatly and water backup is typically gone within a few hours vs. days before.

To address providing barriers to water flow, Del Klever writes in his Appeal about a recent rain fall in May 2020. Mr. Klever's pictures shown below show the water flows following about a 3.2" rain fall.



PICTURES TAKEN 5/29/20

THIS SHOWS THE WATER
FLOWING ACROSS 3342 S. 46
THE PROPERTY TO THE SOUTH
OF US





WATER FLOW AC
3318 S. 46
WHICH WILL BE
OF RETENTION

The left picture shows water flowing across the Klever Property, 3328 S 46, from the south then on to Euler's Property at 3318 S 46. In the right picture the water flow is backed up (retained) by the Euler fence on the north property line of 3318 S 46. After my purchased of 3318 S 46 in the fall of 2016, this chain-link fence was enhanced with logs on the southside and rubble on the northside. The rubble has been collected over the years by my cleaning the backlot areas of brick and concrete from fences, sidewalks, old building footings and other concrete structures. This fence/wall now acts as a water-retention and slow-release system such that the water flows out over several hours. This help to mitigate downstream flooding. The proposed CUP retention pond and overflow release system will reside north of the fence. The proposed water retention system will be a best-practices engineered system designed to be a more affective and aesthetic system incorporated with the construction of **Peanut Hill Lane** and **Trolley Road**.

I would like to thank the City Planning, City Codes and Utility Staff for their diligence in working with me and the REGA Engineering people to bring this application to you.

As the Planning Commission members have stated with their approval this project, SP20013 **Prairie Hill Place** is in concert with the overall objective of the ***Comprehensive Plan*** and is designed to enhance the single family nature of the 46th and High Street area of College View.

I ask for your approval so we can to move forward with the Application process and begin construction this summer.

Sincerely,

Phillip Euler, P.E.

President of EulerRentals.com

5520 Grouse Pl

Lincoln NE 68516-2449

Angela M. Birkett

From: Lisa Lux <lux.lisalux@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 5:03 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: City Budget

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am writing to voice my opinion that funds should not be cut from libraries, sidewalks and parks in order to fund body cameras for the police department. Everything I have researched indicates that body cameras do not necessarily reduce violent interactions between police and the public.

However, I know firsthand that libraries are a vital resource and safe space for anyone in Lincoln, that well maintained sidewalks disproportionately affect the mobility of those who use wheelchairs and canes, and that public parks provide vital green space and access to nature that is especially important to those who don't own property.

The way we spend our money speaks to what we value. Let's take officers out of schools, let's invest in a community that can thrive. When people's needs are met, crime rates drop. Let's work toward a world which is not rooted in punishment but in accountability.

Thank you,
Lisa Lux

Angela M. Birkett

From: Lilly Giesemann <lillygiesemann@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 12:21 PM
To: Mayor; NewsHelp; Council Packet; James M. Bowers; Richard W. Meginnis; Jane Raybould; Tammy J. Ward; Sandra J. Washington; Roy A. Christensen; Bennie R. Shobe
Subject: It's Time To Defund The Police

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Lilly Giesemann and I am a resident of The Near South Neighborhood in Lincoln and I write this letter to urge you to begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs.

As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD.
- Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.

Thank you,

Lilly Giesemann, 2300 B ST
lillygiesemann@gmail.com 402-890-3768

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Kaitlin Doolittle <kaitlindoolittle@gmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 01, 2020 6:17 AM
Subject: DEFUND LINCOLN PD NOW!

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Kaitlin and I am a resident of Lincoln. I write this letter to urge you to begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs.

As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- * Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- * Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- * Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD.
- * Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.

Thank you,

Kaitlin D.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Kamille Lee <kamiklee13@gmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 01, 2020 2:46 PM
Subject: Educate the future

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Kami Lee and I am a resident of Lincoln, NE. I write this letter to urge you to begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs.

As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- * Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- * Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- * Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD.
- * Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.

Thank you,

Kami Lee
5500 Briar Rosa Dr
kamiklee13@gmail.com
308-440-7371

Angela M. Birkett

From: Joshua Kaduthodil <joshua.kaduthodil@gmail.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 02, 2020 9:49 AM
To: Mayor; NewsHelp; Council Packet; James M. Bowers; Richard W. Meginnis; Jane Raybould; Tammy J. Ward; Sandra J. Washington; Roy A. Christensen; Bennie R. Shobe
Subject: Regarding Defunding the Police

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Joshua Kaduthodil and I am a resident of New Jersey concerned about Lincoln. I write this letter to urge you to begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs.

As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- * Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- * Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- * Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD.
- * Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.

Thank you,

Joshua Kaduthodil

Angela M. Birkett

From: Mia Virgillito <msvirgillito@gmail.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 02, 2020 12:12 PM
To: Mayor; Council Packet; James M. Bowers; Richard W. Meginnis; Jane Raybould; Tammy J. Ward; Sandra J. Washington; Roy A. Christensen; Bennie R. Shobe
Subject: Request to Defund Lincoln Police Department

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello,

My name is Mia Virgillito and I am a resident of Lincoln, NE. I am emailing today to demand Lincoln City Council and Mayor Leirion Gaylor Baird redirect funding from the Lincoln Police Department (LPD) to departments and community services which directly benefit the people of Lincoln.

The people of Lincoln have made a resounding stand against police brutality and violence. LPD is not immune from the racial disparities in policing that target Black and Brown people. The city of Lincoln cannot ignore the distrust the people of Lincoln have for the police department. So much of our budget goes to this sector named to serve and protect us, yet it seems they care more for property than our lives and safety.

Mayor Leirion Gaylor Baird recently announced that she wants to equip the LPD with body cams. This will be detrimental to our community. This implementation will cost the taxpayers \$500,000 to purchase and an additional \$300,000 annually to store and review video. Studies show that body cams have not had statistically significant or consistent effects on most measures of officer behavior. Anecdotal evidence shows that they do not stop police from murdering civilians nor do they assist in serving justice afterwards. This can be seen in the cases of Philando Castile, Samuel DuBose, Walter Scott, Tamir Rice, and others. To pay for these ineffective measures of reform, Mayor Leirion Gaylor Baird plans to reduce spending on library media and sidewalk repair. Public libraries are essential for a community to thrive, and disabled individuals rely on access to well paved sidewalks in order to safely travel and live a full and accessible life. For these reasons, I oppose the proposed budget.

Over the last 10 years, LPD's budget has increased by \$20.5 million dollars while other community programs have either barely received any increase in funding or have been defunded. I demand that The Lincoln Lancaster County Health Department and Lincoln City Council follow the lead of the Douglas County Board of Health, Indianapolis City Council, Minneapolis City Council, and other governmental agencies and bodies across the country to announce racism and xenophobia as a public health crisis and defund the police. Funds need to be reallocated to more valuable community services, de-escalation teams, community coordinated health care, and efforts to combat racial and class disparities.

We need to attack the root of violence in our communities that exist due to gross systemic marginalization and policing of Black and Brown communities.

Thank you,
Mia Virgillito

--

Mia Virgillito | she/her

msvirgillito@gmail.com

(402) 598-3623

University of Nebraska-Lincoln 2020

Bachelor of Journalism, Advertising and Public Relations

Angela M. Birkett

From: Debbie Healey <reilly52504@icloud.com>
Sent: Saturday, July 04, 2020 3:25 PM
Subject: [*** INSERT UNIQUE SUBJECT LINE ***]

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Reilly Healey and I am a resident of LaVista, Nebraska. I write this letter to urge you to begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs.

As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- * Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- * Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- * Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD.
- * Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.

Thank you

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Sonora Torquati <sonoratorquati@icloud.com>
Sent: Saturday, July 04, 2020 8:57 PM
To: Mayor; NewsHelp; Council Packet; James M. Bowers; Richard W. Meginnis; Jane Raybould; Tammy J. Ward; Sandra J. Washington; Roy A. Christensen; Bennie R. Shobe
Subject: [*** INSERT UNIQUE SUBJECT LINE ***]
Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Sonora Torquati and I am a resident of Lincoln Nebraska. I write this letter to urge you to begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs.

As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- * Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- * Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- * Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD.
- * Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.

Thank you,

Sonora Torquati
3015 Sewell st. Lincoln, Ne 68502
sonoratorquati@gmail.com
4028751129

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Cheney Hurley <cheney.hurley@gmail.com>
Sent: Saturday, July 04, 2020 9:37 PM
To: Mayor
Subject: We demand the defunding of LPD

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Cheney Hurley and I am a resident of Lincoln, NE. I write this letter to demand you begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs. As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- * Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- * Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- * Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD. * Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.
Please take action and remember you represent us.

Thank you,
Cheney Hurley
5940 Oakridge Dr, Lincoln, NE 68516
cheney.hurley@gmail.com
417-540-8830

Angela M. Birkett

From: Nicole Miller <nicolemarie@twc.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 9:04 PM
Subject: Defund LPD

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor Gaylor Baird and Members of City Council,

My name is Nicole and I am a resident of Lincoln. I write this letter to urge you to begin defunding and demilitarizing the Lincoln Police Department. LPD's budget has increased by 14% since the 2017-2018 budget. For the 2019-2020 year, the portion of the general fund spent on LPD was just under 25%. LPD's increased funding is a direct harm to other necessary and more needed services in our city. Other services including parks and recreation, transportation and utilities, and urban development take much less out of the general cost for the city: 9.8%, 1.3%, and 0.5% respectively (Source: 2018-2020 Council Adopted Biennial Operating Budget). LPD is a direct cost to other services this city desperately needs.

As Lincoln residents, we therefore demand that you take immediate action to ensure the following:

- * Reduce LPD's allocation from the General Fund.
- * Reallocate those funds into housing, jobs, youth programs, restorative justice, mental health workers, and community development programs to keep the community safe.
- * Disallow unauthorized overtime by LPD.
- * Discontinue use of General Fund dollars to pay for settlements due to police murder, misconduct, and negligence.

Lincoln cannot wait any longer for a budget that meets the needs of its residents. The only way to achieve this is to take immediate steps to defund LPD.

Thank you,

Nicole Miller
5433 Troon Dr, Lincoln NE
nicolemarie@twc.com
(270)-564-8924

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Debbie hachiya <kokomohachiya@gmail.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 09, 2020 1:00 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Grant money intended for police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am writing regarding the 635k of free grant money that was to be used for 5 new police officers. With everything that is happening; now is not the time to change your mind in this matter. I feel strongly that this money be used as it was intended and not else where!

Sincerely
Debbie Hachiya

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: mpbartels@frontiernet.net
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 2:15 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: LPD Funding

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Good Aftrenoon,

We trust you have been considering the welfare of the city of Lincoln since hearing from so many citizens with concerns. It saddens us to hear that there are no funds for any new officers. We are acquainted with several law enforcement personel. The stress, they and their families, were under during the riots was horrible. The hours they put in were enough to make anyone exhausted. Never once did we hear a complaint or see them pull back from their duties. These officers are dedicated and focused on their community. We are thankful to see there are body cameras in the new budget. That alone can help be sure the truth is seen and heard. With the events of the last weekend with shootings and riots in the bigger cities would make you realize how much we have to protect here in our smaller cities. Equipping social workers and others to be able to respond is a good plan. However they need to be able to have the help of the police and officers available when the need arises. We urge you to put money in budget for additional officers . Society is hurting for sure but we must protect the innocent and help the victims as we strive to move forward in helpful ways.

We are planning to retire to Lincoln in the next couple of years but sometimes wonder if this is the best move with things the way they are. We have always enjoyed the life in Lincoln but are not so sure it will stay that way if cuts are made to law enforcement . It seems to me as a city grows we need more people on the streets providing a presence of protection . We do own property and pay taxes in Lincoln so we feel we can speak our desires. Thank You for your time and consideration .

Merlyn and Pat Bartels
7812 Ringneck Drive
Lincoln, NE

Angela M. Birkett

From: cmunn@neb.rr.com
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 10:05 AM
To: Mayor
Cc: Council Packet
Subject: police officer grant is needed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Good Morning to you all,

I wanted to take a few moments of your time to share my support of accepting the grant that has been allocated to LPD to add additional officers. I am not even sure why it is being considered to not accepting the grant. The budget should go forward with allowing the hiring of additional officers, LPD is currently behind national safety standards. Are you okay with this? Our officers patrol the streets solely on their own, there is not enough for them to be teamed up with another officer, this is a risk to their safety. In addition, having the additional officers allow for broader patrolling and community service.

I hear of talk of having mental health professionals take calls for service for citizens who have mental health disorders. I support this idea, but it comes with a price. I have worked with many mental health case workers, and just as you all assume with law enforcement, there are good ones and bad ones. I have seen many case workers due the bare minimum needed, only to walk away and leave the citizen back to figuring things out on their own. Most case workers will not even go out to the call with out the police first making sure the situation is safe. Do you know any case worker who will go out at 2 in the morning, by themselves to address a violent mental health call? I don't. IT's a joint effort on both parties, and they need each other, which again if we have more police officers, to assist and be on the street, they would have time for this.

I perfect example, I knew of a person who lives in the new South neighborhood. She calls the police on average of 10 to 15 times a month. Why? she believes people are stealing her things, when there is no evidence of this or something is missing. To assist in reducing the calls to LPD, I set her up with a case worker. For about 2 months, calls reduced to 3-5 a month. So the case worker moved on, because she felt she completed her task, and the citizen did not care for her assistance and did not want to be case managed. So the following month, calls went back up to her residence to about 15 a month. She is well known for LPD and they go out or call her everytime she calls. When I contacted her to find out what happened with the case worker, she said she has not spoken to her in over 2 months....and here is the best part....she calls LPD because she feels safer and they spend the time to talk to her. On average, per month, they are to her unit, over 3-5 hours a month...and they do this to help her. Oh, not that it matters much, but she is a person of color who fully supports LPD and what they do for her, case manager not so much. So how do you propose to handle this? Force a case manger on someone who does not want one, who feels safer with the police. I have several instances I could share with you on how time after time, case workers fail to do what they say they will. But yet, our thoughts are to cut police officers or not hire more, when they are the ones, who will go out make citizens feel safe, protect our community....and continue to serve. This makes no sense to me, why this is being considered. Mayor, you already proposed the budget and accepted the grant, you should keep your word and support your law enforcement, for doing an outstanding job. By not accepting it, it seems you care more about what a few angry people feel rather than what is best for the community in it's entirety.

Thank you for your time. I know all of these decisions are not easy, and I appreciate the time you put into listening to everyone's input.

Cheryl Munn - Law Enforcement Supporter

Angela M. Birkett

From: Margaret Minary <margaretminary@gmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 8:56 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Cops Hiring Program

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please accept the grant to hire more officers for our city. Lincoln has always had less police officers than they need and they do a great job with what they have.

Now, more than ever, we need to show our support for our fine Police department.

Furthermore, don't ever let our city be like Seattle CHOP.

Thank you!
margaretminary@gmail.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Randy Kreifels <nebwizzer@aol.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 8:02 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Cops hiring program grant

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear City Council,

Please accept the \$625,000 Federal grant to support our City's law department. As a resident and taxpayer I am entitled to live in a City that is safe. There will always be bad people whether they are visitors, residents or even people in power, but if we don't have adequate protection for our citizens we are only inviting more future chaos such as the riots we experienced weeks ago,

Please support our City Law Enforcement and the citizens of our great City.

Thank you for all your hard work.

Sincerely, Randy Kreifels

Angela M. Birkett

From: Roger Ripley <rnkrincoln08@hotmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 10:07 PM
To: Mayor; Council Packet
Subject: Accept The Grant

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

The US Justice department has awarded LPD \$625,000 dollars to add more officers-officers who would specifically be trained to reduce gun violence in the city. It is a well known fact LPD's staffing has not kept up with Lincoln's steady population growth. Why is the decision to accept the grant money a difficult one? What message are you sending to Lincoln police officers by rejecting the grant? Please appreciate and publically acknowledge the job our LPD officers perform every day. Accept the grant!

Kathy and Roger Ripley

Sent from my iPad

Angela M. Birkett

From: Kathy Jenkins <kathy.jenkins143@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 9:19 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: grant money

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am writing this in regard to the grant money that was to be spent for new police officers in Lincoln, Nebraska. It is my understanding that the mayor has now changed her mind in allocating these funds earmarked for this. I am extremely disappointed with this decision. Instead of defunding the police- we need to be defending those who put their lives on the line to protect us. Just because there are a few (very few) bad officers- does not mean the rest of the officers should suffer consequences. We need to pay those who are enforcing our laws more instead of demoralizing them. Shame on Ms. Baird.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Kim MARSH <kimmymarsh@icloud.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 9:07 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Grant money

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Honored Mayor,

As a citizens of Lincoln, Nebraska all our 57 years, please reconsider putting grant money towards police officers. We desperately need our police force, & it greatly concerns citizens such as ourselves that you would take this money away from supporting such a necessary cause.

We beg you to look beyond your own agenda & truly listen to the citizens of Lincoln, Nebraska & honor what the majority of people wish.

Thank you for your consideration.

Respectfully,

Michael & Kimberly Marsh

Realty Trust Group

2300 South 48th Street, Suite 1

Lincoln, Nebraska 68506

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Cindy Neisius <dneisius@neb.rr.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 8:36 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Hire more police please

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor,

Please hire the 5 more police officers as planned. There is so much more crime in our city, we desperately need more police. We don't want to be like New York & Chicago with many dying everyday. Let's keep our city safe. Please hire as many police as you can as the police coverage is not keeping up with the growth of our city.

Thank you,

Cynthia A. Neisius

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Allison Dittman <allison.dittman1@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 8:27 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Grant money to Police Please

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello!

I would like to you make sure the grant money goes to police like it was initially supposed to. I've heard that the grant money might not go to the police.

Thank you for listening!

Allison Dittman

Angela M. Birkett

From: downunger@gmail.com
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 8:23 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Grant money

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello mayor,

It is my understanding that the \$635,000 of grant money was specifically for 5 additional police officers, and you have "changed your mind."

That is not why you were elected. It is fraudulent, and we need the officers. Fix it, please.

Jim Unger

Angela M. Birkett

From: Michelle Walsh <mjwalsh46@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 6:57 PM
To: Mayor; Council Packet
Subject: No defunding of the Lincoln Police Department

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor and City Council Members of Lincoln, Nebraska:

Please reconsider any thoughts of defunding the Lincoln Police Department (LPD). We all know there are good and bad employees in every field. Just because you have a bad second grade teacher does not mean that all teachers are bad. The majority of Law Enforcement Officers (LEO's) in our nation are good people who chose their career because they want to help, serve, and protect. Ask their stories. Many chose their career to help prevent others from what they have endured. These are not all people who come from perfect, privileged families. Too often, I have heard about their abusive fathers, alcoholic mothers, cousins who can't stay on the good side of the law, etc. These LEO's risk their lives to help protect yours. My husband and his colleagues have worked countless nights, weekends, and holidays trying to help and save other families while missing out on their own children's games and other family activities. My husband is truly an Eagle Scout who gives his all to his work and family without regard for himself. LPD already has too few officers. The people of Lincoln would not sleep as peacefully at night if they knew how few officers are working due to a shortage of officers. This shortage puts Lincoln and all Law Enforcement Officers at risk. My husband may be a number to you, LPD # 1272, but he is one of the best things that has ever happened to me and the father of our four children. While he is giving his time and energy to help make Lincoln a better place, he and his colleagues also need to be protected and supported. I like to see the good in people but realize that talk alone does not cure all crime. We need good Law Enforcement Officers now more than ever. **Please examine closely the consequences of defunding the Lincoln Police Department. Emergencies are when you need the people you take for granted the most.** Thank you for your consideration of this matter.

Sincerely,

Dr. Michelle Walsh, MD FAAP
Ph. (402) 730-1270

Angela M. Birkett

From: rcpierce@windstream.net
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 5:03 PM
To: Mayor
Cc: Council Packet
Subject: Funding for LPD

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please support our city and officers with a budget that will allow for the 5 additional officers that we are needing. LPD is such an important part of our community and we NEED to keep the department well staffed and trained. Those extra funds would support them, so they can in turn support our citizens. Thank you for your time!

Cheryle Pierce, 2843 Drake Street. 68516

Angela M. Birkett

From: Sheryl Parde <sparde@lps.org>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 12:12 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police Funding

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor,

Please reconsider funding new police officers with grant money.

Thank you,
Sheryl Parde

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: David O'Doherty <djodoherty@msn.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 11:53 AM
To: Council Packet; Mayor
Subject: Accept Federal Cop Grant

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please support our LPD officers and accept the Federal "Cop Grant" the mayor applied for a year ago.

David J. O'Doherty
Relator | Learner | Achiever | Connectedness | Responsibility
djodoherty@msn.com
402.488.6428 Residence 402.440.7693 Cell

Angela M. Birkett

From: Chelsea McGuffey <cnmcguffey@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 10:46 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Grant money

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please reconsider using the grant money on the newly hired police officers. This is not a political decision; rather, a decision for public safety. Our police officers are highly trained & dedicated to keeping our communities safe. A few bad police officers in other states do not speak for Lincoln just as dangerous looters do not speak for peaceful protesters as a whole.

Thank you,

Chelsea McGuffey

Angela M. Birkett

From: MCassidy <mcassidy@neb.rr.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 10:29 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support LPD

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am a resident of Lincoln, NE and want to voice my support for our Lincoln Police Department. The money that was awarded to the city to hire additional officers should be utilized for the purpose for which it was intended. Our force should not be penalized because of situations that have occurred in other cities. Do what is right for our community and support the law enforcement agencies that have served it's citizens well.

Melanie Cassidy
Lincoln, NE

Sent from my iPad

Angela M. Birkett

From: elainecarver@juno.com
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 9:19 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

We love and support our police and want the department to be enlarged and given the tools they need to keep our city safe. NO DEFUNDING.
Gary and Elaine Carver

Angela M. Birkett

From: Tyler Merry <tmerry35@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 9:08 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Concerned citizen

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

To whom ever it may concern,

I've lived in the state of Nebraska all 27 years of my life thus far, Lincoln to be exact. The respect and awareness of our community has been built upon a cornerstone of principles. These principles have a long history of protecting and adding value to the family unit, which in my opinion, is the foundation that fuels pockets of thriving communities.

These organic areas of growth must be protected and serve as blueprints to model. Law and order must be upheld. Our police must undergo growth and change, not through defunding but education just like the rest of us. Where is that 635k\$ of grant money being put towards?

Witnessing the radical left adopt and throttle a vague narrative of cancel culture while consumed with complete hysteria is crippling the glue that keeps this state running (glue being that family unit.)

Our state is and will continue to be the heartbeat of this great nation. Understand that a younger generation of American patriots in this state are learning and growing faster than you can think up more gender neutral pronouns. We stand for the flag and kneel only to our creator around here.

Good luck with your one term mayor.

Sincerely,
A common tax payer

Angela M. Birkett

From: DON & Julie Henslee <henslee6@aol.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 8:30 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please use the funds to grow our amazing, professional, dependable police force. We appreciate the safety our officers offer, and we need to spend everything we have to support them. Please help keep our state safe. Thanks for your service and leadership. Don & Julie Henslee

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Woody <justwoody90213@aol.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 8:26 AM
To: Mayor
Cc: Council Packet
Subject: Lincoln Police staffing reductions

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor and City Council Persons

I retired from the Lancaster County Sheriff's Office 9 months ago after servicing that Office for 47 plus years. Over the years, so many of the National Police issues today have been addressed and changed years ago by both LSO & LPD. Both agencies already have a problem loosing Officers to OPD and are having a hard time hiring good qualified Officers. The choke hold (vascular restraint) has been banned by both agencies for years. I have heard how short LPD is just handling their daily calls by listening to my radio at work. 2 years ago LPS HAD to have Officers in the Middle Schools because of public outcry. Today they want them out because of public outcry. This is not the majority of Lincoln, just the loudest. I am sorry but sitting In our homes and feeling safe in your home is a right of ALL Lincolniters not a privilege. Please do not cut funds that reduce Police manpower. It is already much lower than the national adverage.

Respectfully,
Wm. D. Woodruff
(Woody to the vast majority)

Sent from Woody's iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Julie Hawkins <juliehawkins31@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 8:05 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police Officers

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I support the police 100% I can't even believe you are doing this. This act makes my heart very sad!

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Nelson, Cynthia M. <CNelson@stez.org>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 7:58 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: 5 new officers

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please use the grant money to hire the 5 new Police officers in Lincoln. I work in a local hospital and see first hand how much we need them. It would be a very important show of support!

Thank You,
Cindy Nelson

Caution: This email is both proprietary and confidential, and not intended for transmission to (or receipt by) any unauthorized person(s). If you believe that you have received this email in error, do not read any attachments. Instead, kindly reply to the sender stating that you have received the message in error. Then destroy it and any attachments. Thank you.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Sandi Peterson <auntsandi77@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 7:48 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Please...no law enforcement cuts for Lincoln!

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Mayor,

Please don't make the huge mistake of cutting the city law enforcement budget like other cities are doing. Your responsibility is to keep Lincoln safe, please do the right thing.

You were voted into office to keep Lincoln safe. We do not want lawlessness here in Nebraska. Nebraskans want law and order!

No law enforcement cuts, please!

Sandi Peterson
[7355 SW 29th St](#)
[Lincoln NE 68523](#)

Angela M. Birkett

From: bjoberg <bjoberg@att.net>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 7:10 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: LPD

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please continue to fund the police department to the max. The majority of citizens know how vitale they are to the safety of us all.

Janelle Oberg

Sent from my Verizon, Samsung Galaxy smartphone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Patricia Kay <pattykay402@icloud.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 7:37 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police funding

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Council and Mayor Baird,

Please fully fund the police to add the five new positions. We are in support of the police and want them to have the resources they need to keep the peace. I

Sincerely,
Patricia H. Kay
Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Angela Barry <barry.angela@yahoo.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 6:34 AM
To: Council Packet; Mayor
Subject: Police Department needs to grow. Save Lincoln. I support police!

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

We need law and order! Currently, the police department numbers are behind national safety standards. This is not a safe situation for anyone. Consider the next time vandalism occurs in the neighborhood, if there is a shortage of law enforcement, minor crimes are not going to be and can't be a priority with limited staffing. This encourages criminals since their risk of getting caught will reduce and crime rates will sky rocket.

During the riots, the police were stretched thin. Officers were working long shifts and some worked up to 40 hours in overtime after already putting in a full week. This is not safe or healthy for anyone not to mention a drain on the city's budget due to addition overtime pay. If we had enough officers we wouldn't have had to pay as much overtime.

There has been talk of having social workers respond to the mental health calls instead of police. Can you really imagine an unarmed social worker responding to a suicidal or homicidal armed party? Law enforcement would likely get called to the scene after physical harm had already occurred.

Please do not make assumptions or stereotypes or LPD based on what you see in the national news. We are fortunate to have a good group of officers who love and protect this city and are willing to put everything on the line to protect it. Once Covid is over, I would encourage you to look into the citizen's academy or doing a ride along to see what they go through on a daily basis before you make the judgement that LPD needs defunded.

I've considered Lincoln to be a safe place but by threatening to defund police and not increase staffing you are putting all citizens of Lincoln in a dangerous situation. With a higher crime rate Lincoln will not be considered a safe place to live and will keep good citizens from coming and staying in Lincoln to flourish and in turn make this great city stronger.

I encourage you to not cut LPD funding and instead increase it. We need cops more now than ever!

-Angela Barry

Angela M. Birkett

From: brenda.merry1017@gmail.com
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 10:35 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: LPD

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Federal grant money was allotted for the new officers of Lincoln.
How is it that you so quickly change your mind?
You are new to this city, and really don't understand who we are. You are being swayed by a few.
WE value law and order, we value our police. This city needs police to control what you cant.

PLEASE NOTE THIS IS MY NEW EMAIL ADDRESS

Brenda Merry
brenda.merry1017@gmail.com
402-560-0346

Angela M. Birkett

From: Jennifer Haralson <jenn@vision-ed.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 10:23 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police Grant

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Do not give in to BLMs demands of defunding our police or changing our force.
We received a grant for more officers & more training, and we should use that grant.
We are losing money left & right due to shut downs & lack of tax revenue.
Keep your promises & fully fund our police & add more for this grant.
Thank you.

Jennifer Haralson, M.Ed, President
Visionary Education, Inc.
Practical Business Coaching

Complicated Concepts, Simply Taught
402-318-5397
www.Vision-Ed.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Shari Rector <shari_whcpa@yahoo.com>
Sent: Saturday, July 04, 2020 1:51 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support Lincoln Police Department

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am a resident of Lincoln, Nebraska, and I support the Lincoln Police Department. The idea of defunding LPD is, in my opinion, ludicrous. Instead, let's concentrate on providing them with the manpower and equipment that they need to do their jobs. Let's honor them, train them and appreciate that they put their lives on the line for our (my) safety every working minute of their shifts. Let's lift their morale by showing them our support, let them know we value them and the safety they provide to protect and serve us. I hope you will join me in supporting the Lincoln Police Department!

Sharilyn Rector
9169 Round Hill Drive
Lincoln, NE 68526

Angela M. Birkett

From: Sara Cease <slcease@yahoo.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 02, 2020 12:12 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support of LPD

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello!

I would like to express my support of the Lincoln Police Department.

While getting a speeding ticket they may not be my favorite people.... BUT I do know that in that act, they are keeping me and my fellow drivers safe. :)

Defunding the LPD is NOT the answer. We have social programs already, so diverting funding to them would not increase our safety and welfare. It would simply give additional funds to programs that may need to be doing better or different things at their level.

Safety of ALL citizens should be taken in to consideration. Not just groups that are being the squeaky wheel right now.

Please continue to fund the LPD and the fine officers that spend their hearts and soul protecting us, our property and the values we enjoy as Nebraskans.

Thank you,
Sara Cease

Angela M. Birkett

From: Rita Antonson <rantonson@neb.rr.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 02, 2020 11:14 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support police officers

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear City Council Members:

Thank you for your service to our community.

My family and I fully support law enforcement in the city of Lincoln. PLEASE do not defund the Lincoln Police Department. We need the police in order to have a safe and civil community.

Thank you,

Rita Antonson

Angela M. Birkett

From: Virginia Hess <virginiahess66@gmail.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 02, 2020 8:00 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Funding the police Dept.

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I appreciate everything the department does. All of my interactions over the years have been positive. If anything we need more policemen and women. Funding should be increased for training and adding positions as the city continues to grow.

Keep our city safe.

I have lived in Lincoln for over 30 years.

Virginia Hess

1220 Manchester Dr

Angela M. Birkett

From: Stacy Lang <saved2007@yahoo.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 01, 2020 7:19 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support police

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am writing to let you know I support the police department. It's a necessary part of our society and have committed their lives to serve and protect us. There are more good cops than bad. Maybe some changes need to be made but I feel to completely dismantle the police department puts all of us in even more danger and accomplishes nothing.

Thank you.

Stacy

[Sent from Yahoo Mail for iPhone](#)

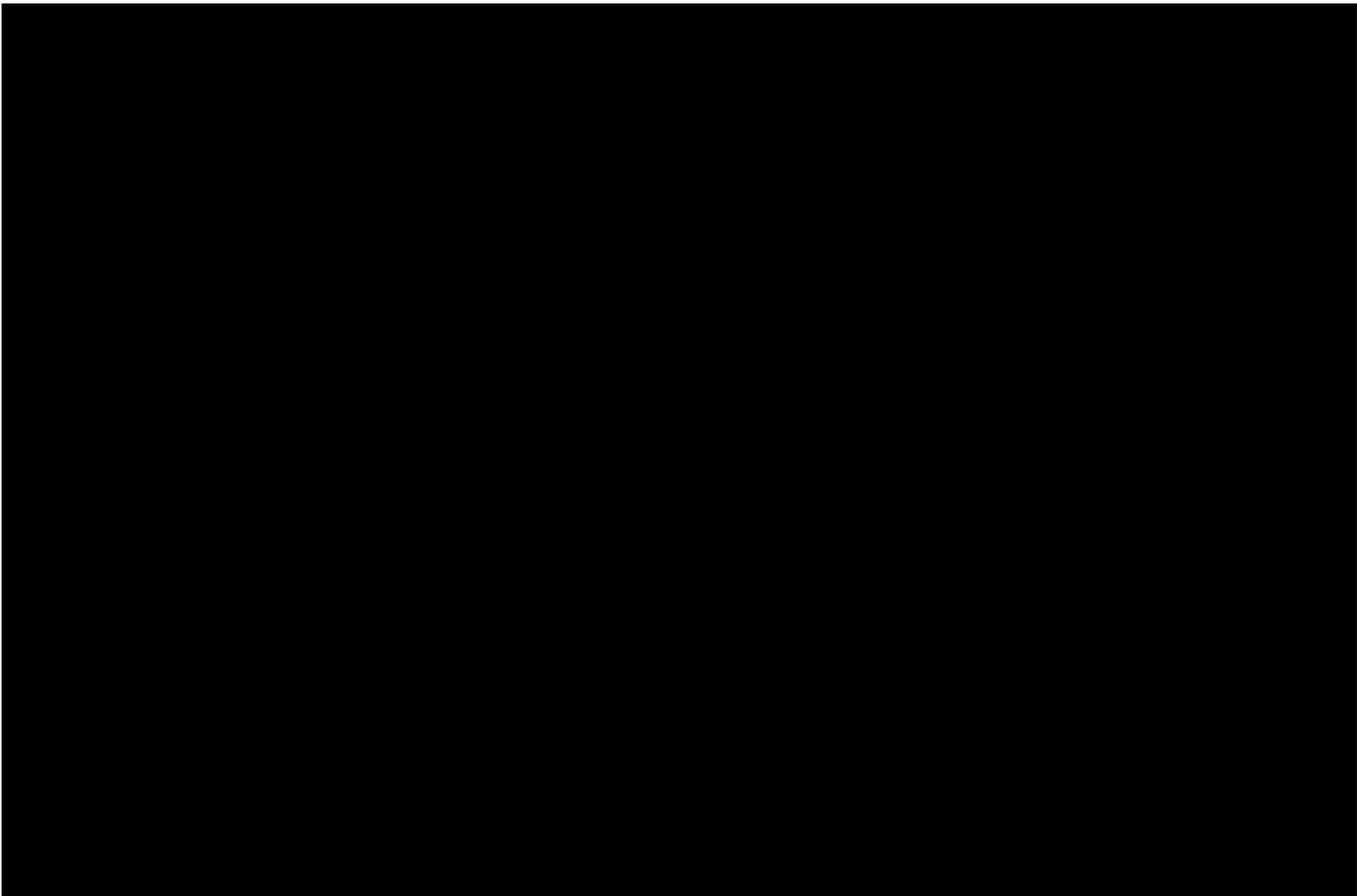
Angela M. Birkett

From: Angela Barry <barry.angela@yahoo.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 01, 2020 2:27 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: The facts about police

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Lincoln Police are not prejudice. They are not violent. Do not defund our police. They do a great job and we need them to protect us. We need more officers. Your lack of support is making good officers quit and turning good applicants away!



No. of times Lincoln Police Officers were Dispatched to
Calls for Service (2017-2019): 363,879

Percentage of Dispatches resulting in an Excessive Force
Complaint: 0.0069%

Percentage of Dispatches resulting in a Sustained Excessive
Force Complaint after Investigation: 0.0005%

Learn the Facts about Police.
Sources: LPD Citizens Police Advisory Board Report 2019

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Alan Hansen <togdsglry@gmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 01, 2020 1:21 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support Lincoln Police Department

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

7/1/2020

Dear City Council Members:

I am a proud 70-year citizen of the great city of Lincoln, Nebraska.

Many things have contributed to this greatness but none as important as our law enforcement.

Keeping a safe community is, and has always been, paramount to our continued liberty.

Liberty expands the social, political, business, educational, religious and family boundaries.

Without law enforcement Lincoln would be on the brink of anarchy, everyone doing what seems right in their own eyes without accountability.

Chief Bliemeister and the entire Lincoln Police Department, are doing a fantastic job in spite of all the ridicule and animosity unjustly directed at them by a few.

Please protect all of us by protecting and supporting our Lincoln Police Department!

As elected representatives of our great city, PLEASE take the initiative to lead all of us by publicly raising up the banner of RESPECT AND APPRECIATION for our law enforcement officers!

Stand for what is right!

Courageously, put your political life on the line for our police officers.

They put their life on the line for each of us every time they put on that uniform.

Sincerely,

Alan M. Hansen

Angela M. Birkett

From: Paul Keating <thepaulkeating@gmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 01, 2020 11:15 AM
To: Council Packet

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

You need to know that most citizens of Lincoln support and respect the police. Does the City Council realize how disheartening it is for our police to see "Black Lives Matter" and "Defund the Police" posters plastered on light poles all over the city? What are you doing to remove them and punish the criminals littering our city? I see nothing being said or done by you. Get off your butts and clean this problem up! I dare you.

Paul Keating

Angela M. Birkett

From: Joey Hartman <joanehartman@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 7:16 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: It's very important to take the government grant for more police officers

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear City Council,

I watched the City Council meeting last night discussing supporting or not supporting our police officers. I wasn't able to watch all of it but I watched a couple of hours. The people who want you to not accept the federal grant for 5 additional police officers gave no solid reasons as to why in Lincoln Nebraska that should happen.

I have friends and family in law enforcement. TWENTY FOUR police officers were injured in the rioting. Not to mention the emotional abuse towards officers who had NOTHING to do with the problems in Minneapolis.

I was a teacher for 33 years, most of that in Lincoln. We had fabulous School Resource Officers that got to know the staff and students both. They were recognized and appreciated and seen as "helpers" and friends. God forbid we would have had any shooting incidents and not have a School Resource Officer, A TRAINED LAW ENFORCEMENT OFFICER in school buildings! That is still a very real possibility in this day and age.

My husband and I live here even though property taxes make it one of the worst places in which to retire. I can't tell you how upsetting it is to listen to these supporters of defunding the police who most of them look way to young to even pay taxes...or have had enough world experience to know why defunding the police or not accepting a federal grant for additional officers is a TERRIBLE idea and will leave people in Lincoln at risk of not getting law enforcement support when they really need it.

Is there room for police reform? maybe...probably. But that means more and better training, not less police officers.

I cannot imagine the lawlessness that will undoubtedly occur in this and other cities without police. We need to appreciate them and support them. Not treat them like criminals. One way to support them is to accept the federal grant for more officers.

Put yourselves in their positions! Would you want their thankless jobs?? We need to appreciate them and give them the support they need to keep our city safe.

I hope and pray you do the right thing, the reasonable thing, the SAFE thing... The thing you would have done 6-12 months ago had the Minneapolis incident never happened.

Thank You,

Joey Hartman

Angela M. Birkett

From: Greg Schnasse <greg.schnasse@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 3:39 PM
To: Council Packet
Cc: Greg Schnasse
Subject: Defund Police Movement

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor of Lincoln,

A brief note to show my strong support for Chief Bliemeister and the Lincoln Police Department.

My wife and our families live in Lincoln and certainly do not want to live in a Seattle or Minneapolis or Chicago or anyplace else where they have a Mayor/city government that condone defunding their city police department. I cannot even fathom that happening in OUR United States of America!! Unbelievable to even have to address such a terrible movement.

I would recommend that you never consider this in OUR City of Lincoln.

Thank You,
Greg Schnasse

Angela M. Birkett

From: Carla Butler <dcbutler2747@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 3:20 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: support Police

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Our son-in-law is in the Lancaster Sheriff's Department. He has a family like most of the officers. Police departments need more funding not less. Keep them safe so they will go home to their families
Thank you

Angela M. Birkett

From: David Dietz <David.C.Dietz@outlook.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 2:59 PM
To: Mayor; Council Packet
Subject: Some thoughts about policing

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Mayor Gaylor-Baird and Council:

I am one of your older citizens who has been watching with both shock and fear as some cities in our country have had areas descend into what looks like complete chaos. For me, one of the most important fundamental duties of government is to keep order. I realize that this duty must be balanced with our nation's fundamental right of free speech or "the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances" as stated in the First Amendment to the Constitution of the United States. Therefore, as I see it, it is perfectly alright for a group of people to assemble to protest the action (or inaction) of government. However, it is also plain language in the Amendment that such assembly shall be "peaceable". When a mindless mob forms and destroys, loots, and burns private (or public) property, action is expected by your citizens to minimize such behavior. So my first point is that as a Lincoln citizen, I feel that the Lincoln City Police were totally within their sphere of duty to take action to stop the destructive behavior that occurred on or about May 30.

As I now watch calls to "Defund Police" and "Abolish Police" I am reminded of an earlier time in our country. I am a Vietnam Veteran and I recall when Vietnam Veterans were returning from their time in Vietnam, they were greeted with signs saying "Baby Killers", "Murderers", and so on. It seems to me that now the mobs are treating our law enforcement professions in the same manner. All of this is being predicated by a very, VERY few bad police officers. As a result, our police department is no doubt demoralized by all of this as my fellow soldiers, sailors, airmen, Marines, and I were back in the late 1960's. My suggestion to help this situation is to certainly NOT reduce the budget support of our police department. I fully support the current budget to add some officers using the dollars from the eliminated Public Safety Director position. I also want to encourage you to move ahead with the body camera program. I know there are some who think this only helps defend the police. This is not the only outcome. When a questionable event occurs, what could possibly be more helpful than real-time recording(s) of the event. This is true whether defending the police or prosecuting the police. Finally, I think it is an excellent idea to utilize non-police professionals to help with calls such as domestic violence, mental health, and other such relatively non-violent situations. However, police need to be involved because any stressful situation can become violent. I know there are citizens in Lincoln that feel unsafe, insecure, threatened, and so on by the presence of the police. Removing the police is not a good solution to this problem. Without a police presence, criminal interests will surely move in to fill the void. Please examine ways to reduce these undesirable feelings about our police and develop community programs to help improve that situation.

Thank you for reading my thoughts about these most pressing problems. I wish you all success in finding ways to keep Lincoln the kind and safe city we all love.

Dave Dietz
2236 Scotch Pine Trl
402-209-1292

Angela M. Birkett

From: Kruce, Douglas <DKRUCE@amfam.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 11:43 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police Dept

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello City Council members, and thank you for taking time to read my email.

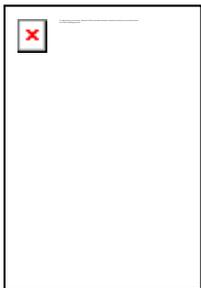
There is a lot of discussion lately regarding “police reform”, and I would like to give my input.

My wife & I grew up in Lincoln, and have raised 3 kids in Lincoln. We have ALWAYS felt our LPD do a fantastic job of policing our city. We have taught our children to respect and trust our law enforcement. On a personal/ family level, we appreciate our LPD and value them highly!

As a small business owner I also value our LPD. My insurance agency deals with financial products and handles various forms of moneys on a daily basis. That being said, my employees and myself have a peace of mind that if anything unlawful would happen, that our local law enforcement is just a call away!

In short, Lincoln’s police department is a real asset!

Again, thank you for your time and service.
Doug



DOUGLAS S KRUCE, LUTCF | **AMERICAN FAMILY INSURANCE**
5730 R St | Lincoln, NE 68505
Office: 402.423.1224

[email](#) | [website](#) | [quote](#) | [My Account](#)  
[review our agency](#) | [sign up to text us](#)

American Family Insurance Company | American Family Life Insurance Company | American Family Mutual Insurance Company, S.I. | American Standard Insurance Company of Ohio
American Standard Insurance Company of Wisconsin | Home Office - 6000 American Parkway | Madison, WI 53783

Permanent General Assurance Corporation | Permanent General Assurance Corporation of Ohio | The General Automobile Insurance Company, Inc. DBA The General® | Home Office - 2636 Elm Hill Pike | Nashville, TN 37214 wholly owned subsidiaries of American Family Mutual Insurance Company, S.I.

If you do not want to receive commercial messages from American Family in the future please [Unsubscribe](#).

*If you are not the intended recipient, please contact the sender and delete this e-mail, any attachments and all copies.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Tyler Ford <lsefb73@yahoo.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 10:46 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Lincoln Police Department

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello,

I'm writing to voice my support for increased funding for the Lincoln Police Department. I would expect these funds would be used to promote better community relationships, increased training for officers on working with individuals suffering from mental health and substance abuse issues, as well as additional training focused on appropriately responding to high stress scenarios. Please give this opinion careful consideration and I would hope Lincoln would set the example by making the effort to make our community's law enforcement the most knowledgeable and prepared they can be, for the vast array of situations they must respond to.

Thanks,

Tyler Ford

Angela M. Birkett

From: Lance McCord <lancer.mccord@yahoo.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 10:27 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Upholding law, order and true justice

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

City Council members: It is imperative that you use your God-given authority as city officials to do what is good and right for All citizens in Lincoln, and not Some citizens and vocal special-interest groups and organizations.

There are essentials needed for creating and sustaining a civil society, and that should be the goal of every concerned citizen in Lincoln and Nebraska, yes? An essential part of a civil society is a strong police force, not one that is being undermined, attacked and demonized by some as we have been witnessing recently. Why are police essential in civil society? Because of the propensity of human beings, regardless of class or race, to do things that are wrong or down-right evil. Will human nature ever completely change? Not this side of eternity; therefore we will always need police to assist in maintaining law, order and civility for All people. If people want less cops, then great; become godly/"virtuous" (to use a term the Founders used for this), since a godly change in the character of a people is the Only way to reduce the need for police. "Colson's Law" perfectly describes this relationship between the morality of a people and Law Enforcement. No way to get around this. But again, since Man will always have a propensity towards "wrongness" and evil, police will always be needed to curb and deter this behavior and assist in a more civil community for everyone.

It is therefore incumbent on you, all leaders and citizens in Lincoln and Nebraska to be united in our support for Law Enforcement and in their God-given role in maintaining law, order and civility (as they have predominantly done, though not without fault) throughout our city, state and nation. I strongly urge you in this, and thank you for your consideration.

Lance McCord

[Sent from Yahoo Mail on Android](#)

Angela M. Birkett

From: Kari Laflin <kari.laflin1@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 10:20 AM
To: Council Packet; Mayor
Subject: defund the police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Good morning

I am writing this letter in concern of your actions to cut law enforcement spending to aid the BLM movement. I am a longtime member of the Lincoln community. I shop, attend church, attend doctor appointments, hospital visits, attend UNL sporting activities, and have had all of my family members attend/graduate from the University of Nebraska. I am concerned of the safety of "us" that are frequent visitors of your city if we are not provided necessary protection from law enforcement from those "agitators" or frequent law offenders that are included in your city. My daughter has had her car and apartment broken into on 3 different occasions and have had great experience from the LPD/LSO. They did capture the individual that robbed her. I do NOT feel that you are hearing from other people that are opposed of your decision to cut funding but only hearing from those who are opposing the budget of the LPD/LSO departments. You need to consider of the safety of the entire population of those who tour your city and live in your city NOT just those who are vocal and protesting.

It is your obligation to represent ALL people not just those who are against the law enforcement community. Furthermore, if you do not have a safe environment in your city...who would want to come and live and do their business in the city of LINCOLN. Many will not be attending sporting, concerts, entertainment activities, shop or furthermore live in your city.

Please keep the "quiet" protesters in mind when making decisions as those are to AFRAID to speak up as they will be labeled in a negative way.

I will be waiting to hear your decisions in this matter..Again the quiet voices are just as important as those who are making a lot of noise

Sincerely,

Kari Laflin

ALL LIVES MATTER!!!!

Angela M. Birkett

From: Wilma Darcy <wilmadarcy@windstream.net>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 10:15 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Funding LPD

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Sent from my iPhone. I'm writing to express my opposition to any move to defund our Lincoln police department. I support the department wholeheartedly!

Angela M. Birkett

From: dmsimmons@windstream.net
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 10:00 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Keep our Police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

We do not need to defund our police force. We need to continue to support them in their efforts to make policing our community more equitable!

Thank you David & Melody Simmons

Angela M. Birkett

From: bob@bobbennie.com
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 9:58 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Lincoln City Council Members,

This letter is regarding the issue of “defunding the police”. I strongly oppose the reduction of funding for the Lincoln Police Department. A basic function of government is to protect the citizens. The movement to reduce or eliminate funding for police is irresponsible and dangerous. We should be applauding, thanking and fully supporting our law enforcement officers. They have an extremely difficult and dangerous job. If anything, we should be increasing the funding for law enforcement. Please support our Lincoln Police and resist any efforts to tie their hands with budget cuts or additional restrictions that prevent them from doing their jobs. Please encourage our law enforcement, especially Chief Bliemeister, and give them our community’s full support.

Thank you for your service to our city.

Sincerely,

Bob

Bob Bennie, CFP, MBA



1601 Old Cheney Road, Lincoln, NE 68512

Ph: 402-421-2626 • Fax: 402-421-8168

www.bobbennie.com

Bob Bennie Wealth Management will not accept orders and/or instructions transmitted by e-mail, and will not be responsible for carrying out such orders and/or instructions. Please do not transmit such information by email. This email and any files transmitted with it are confidential and intended solely for the use of the individual or entity to whom they are addressed. If you have received this email in error please notify the system manager.

Securities offered through Kestra Investment Services, LLC, member FINRA/SIPC.

This email, including attachments, is intended for the exclusive use of the addressee and may contain proprietary, confidential, or privileged information, **AND IS PROTECTED BY LAW**. If you are not the intended recipient, any dissemination, use, review, distribution, printing, or copying is strictly prohibited. If you have received this email in error, please notify me via return email and permanently delete the original and destroy all copies. Please note that if this e-mail message contains a forwarded message or is a reply to a prior message, some or all of the contents of this message or any attachments may not have been produced by the originator of this email. This notice is automatically appended to each e-mail message.

Angela M. Birkett

From: ct44155@windstream.net
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 9:02 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: support for the police dept.

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

City Council: Make a smart decision and keep the police department fully funded and expand it with the grant.

We all have seen what a lawless group of misguided individuals can and will do if allowed to. The city has changed

and not in a good way since we moved here in 2000. Gangs and cultural differences have made it necessary for more

police involvement in all sections of the community. Let us have peace and community togetherness for all.

Sincere concern, Calvin & Carol Thomas 6821 S. 33rd St. Lincoln, NE 68516

Angela M. Birkett

From: John Thompson <jthompson@dialysiscenteroflincoln.org>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 8:36 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: LPD

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

The Lincoln Police Department does an outstanding job for the citizens of Lincoln.

This is a feelings of the majority of the people I visit with every day.

Just because others decided to do damage, stay out after curfew does not give them the right to UNFUND the police departments.

Thank you from a 73 year citizen of Lincoln. John Thompson

CONFIDENTIALITY NOTICE: This e-mail message, including any attachments, is for the sole use of the intended recipient(s) and may contain confidential and privileged information. Any unauthorized review, use, disclosure or distribution is prohibited. If you are not the intended recipient, please contact the sender by reply e-mail and destroy all copies of the original message.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Brad Clark <bjc362457@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, June 30, 2020 7:17 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: LPD

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I'm going to get up on a soapbox.

I talked to a officer from the Lincoln Police Dept today. LPD is having a hard time right now.

I have run across police in other parts of this country and in different countries. I can tell you we are lucky here in Lincoln. I have worked in conjunction with them to clean up troubled properties, insuring the safety of tenants. I've seen programs they have implemented to help felons integrate back into society, or help with mental health issues. During the protests/riots they had gas and other liquids poured or thrown on them, along with rocks and fireworks. In my opinion they showed more restraint than any of us would There was a curfew put in place for everybody but the protesters. If they happen to get arrested, some charges were dropped Last week there was a mentally challenged 18 girl that went missing at 17th and Washington. It was in the upper 90s and LPD sent every available officer to try and find her. She was found later at 20 and South. While they were trying to calm her down and get help to her passing cars were yelling 4 letter words and that they should die.

I don't know on what plane or dimension any of this behavior is acceptable.

I would like to let the city council and mayor know they are lucky to have the police dept we have and they need to back them or they will lose some of these fine officers

Thanks for listening
Brad Clark

councilpacket@lincoln.ne.gov

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: SKepler <s_kepler@yahoo.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 10:35 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Lincoln City Police Officers

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am a concerned citizen living in Lincoln. While I have not had any real involvement with police officers I hold them in high regard. In today's difficult and challenging world I feel we need more police officers and certainly not fewer. I have heard via the grape vine there is a movement to cut funding or eliminate our police force. I am writing to strongly urge the council to provide financial support for our police officers. I am grateful they have a strong presence in our city.

Best regard she,
Sheila Kepler
Lincoln resident

[Sent from Yahoo Mail for iPad](#)

Angela M. Birkett

From: rubydnat@aol.com
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 10:28 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Possible Defunding of police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am writing to ask you NOT to defund police. The safety of ALL citizens depends on having a strong presence of law enforcement. Removing the "gatekeepers" invites a loss of self control and an empowerment to individuals who have unbridled reactions. I would go so far as to suggest MORE funding to encourage citizens to engage WITH law enforcement by using g education and positive interaction

Robbie Nathan
910 Coachmans Drive
68510

Angela M. Birkett

From: Karen Carlson <karen.carlson42@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 10:24 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Defunding of Police Dept

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I would like to voice my opinion re the call to defund the police department. In my opinion, to do that would definitely indicate a lack of responsibility by the City Council.

My suggestion would be to put it on the ballot. And those folks that want to defund the police department have to circulate a petition to get it there. I don't want to have to buy a gun and learn to shoot it because some people who shouted louder than me got their way. I am very tired of turning the other cheek so things a few scream for are forced on those of us who have turned the other cheek for years. Enough. Let's not have a civil war by letting these loud mouths win.

Sincerely,
Karen A. Carlson
4941 S 75th St
Lincoln, NE 68516

Sent from my iPad

Angela M. Birkett

From: Carolyn <rwolgamott@windstream.net>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 8:26 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Supporting our police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I want to send my support for our police force. Because of them and the daily risks they take our city is a safer place to be. God Bless !! Carolyn Wolgamott

Angela M. Birkett

From: Judy Moeller <moellerjud@aol.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 7:59 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Defunding the police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Anyone who thinks defunding the police is a good idea must be crazy. Anyone who expects law and order must realize that police that only need to be funded we should have the newest and best equipment to keep us safe.

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Judy Moeller <moellerjud@aol.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 7:56 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Funding the police force

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

The thought of the funding the police is absurd. Anyone who wants a lawn order must realize that is achieved my funding the police so they can be equipped with the newest and latest equipment to ensure the public safety. Anyone who thinks defunding the police is a good idea has to question their sanity. Thank God we have police to keep us safe. A concerned Lincoln resident.

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Judy Moeller <moellerjud@aol.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 7:50 PM
To: Council Packet

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please don't defund the police. I can just see how many good hard working policemen the city will lose and that is something Lincoln cannot have. Just keep in mind who is asking for such a ridiculous idea!

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: andrea durfee <adurfee1@icloud.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 7:44 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Defunding police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Council Members,
I am in favor of keeping our police force funded and intact.
We have a wonderful community in Lincoln. Let us continue.
Sincerely, Andrea Durfee

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Wade Stange <stangewade2@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 6:55 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Our Police Force

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

This email us to support our local police force. Through the recent protests, curfew and community challenges, our officers have exercised patience and humility, even when there are those who call them names and show disrespect. Recently they spent two hours helping find a young girl who is mentally challenged only to have obscenities hollered at them. I hope that our City Council will take this into account as they discuss how to move forward following the protests. We are all better together, not divided.

Kind Regards,

Wade Stange

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Mike Gaver <mgaver1@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 6:06 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support for Lincoln Police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I would like to be on the record as supporting the Lincoln Police Department and their budget. It would be a mistake to defund our police department as may be proposed by some radical citizens. The police department in Lincoln is generally functioning well. I interact with them frequently in my job as an emergency room nurse in this city. I can be available for much more in depth comments and words of support related to first hand observation of the function of many Lincoln officers if you have questions. Please get this ridiculous concept of defunding off of the list of things that you may consider implementing to please the protesters.

Thank you,
Michael Gaver
8100 McBride Ave
Lincoln, NE 68516

Angela M. Birkett

From: Ronald Helsing <helsingr@windstream.net>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 5:39 PM
To: Council Packet; Mayor
Subject: Lincoln City Police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

This e-mail is to voice my objections to to defunding or limiting in any manner the effectiveness of the Lincoln Police Department:

1. The city is growing in population and physical size and will continue to need more police protection, not less!
2. My observation is that with the continual increase in drug and alcohol abuse, we will see the need for additional officers in the near future!
3. When I read nearly every day about breakins and larcenies from cars, what is a citizen supposed to do, bite the bullet and ignore the behavior?
4. What are we, the citizens of Lincoln, Nebraska supposed to do if our city officials are unwilling or unable to provide the protection and guidance that we need, but that we are unable to provide for on our own. The situation will become worse yet if people take matters into their own hands.
5. If our Mayor and City Council limit Lincoln's citizen's protection and security in any way; the Mayor, the City Council and all other City Officials must assume the same responsibility for their own safety and protection that the citizens will have to provide for themselves!! i.e. No body guards.

I am a 55 year resident of Lincoln and have been pleased with the Lincoln Police Department's protection and guidance for the city. I do not see any reason to limit or down-size LPD on the basis of criticism from people, many of whom probably were not Lincoln residents. I was pleased with the reports of the Mayor and city residents meeting with many of the residents of Lincoln who were part of the crowd. That dialog is extremely important

My bigger concern for Lincoln, Nebraska, and the USA is the ignorance of those who are pushing for Socialism and/or Communism in our country! The USA cannot become the next Venezuela!

Ron Helsing 7644 Baldwin Ave Lincoln,NE

Angela M. Birkett

From: Stanley Rediger <sjrcrédiger@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 5:20 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police defunding.

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Please do not defund our police. They are our protection, in a civilized society.

We must support them at all costs.

The Redigers

Bob & S.J.

Angela M. Birkett

From: debbierhayes <debbierhayes@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 5:18 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Lincoln Police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear City Council Members,

I am writing this as a concerned citizen of Lincoln. We should not defund our police department. In the 20 years I have lived in Lincoln crime has gone up very little. Our police do excellent work. They are hard working. They always are ready to put their lives on the line. If anything we should increase their pay. Lincoln has grown a lot in the last 20 years. Let's not become a city of crime.

Sincerely,
Debra R. Hayes
2000 SW 33rd St.

Sent from my Samsung Galaxy smartphone.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Rick Newcomer <rnewcomeriii@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 5:17 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Lincoln Police Department

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

To the Lincoln City Council:

As a concerned citizen and taxpayer of Lincoln, I have been made aware of and have witnessed numerous instances that make me honored and proud in the behavior of our Lincoln Police Department. It seems to me that lately, too often Law Enforcement Officers are presumed guilty of being over zealous in their handling of an explosive situation, or worse, harassed by onlookers while performing their duties.

In part, media coverage of recent events locally, regionally and nationally seem to “romanticize” the protests and participants as “young citizens expressing their 1st Amendment Rights.” No where in the 1st Amendment does it mention a citizen has the Right to destroy private or public property or assault a Law Enforcement Officer.

The City of Lincoln, the Mayor, and the City Council needs to stand behind and publicly recognize the Lincoln Police Department for the commendable work it’s Officers have performed under “riotous” conditions. I use that term because what transpired in Lincoln following the melee in Minneapolis was nothing short of mob violence. The Officers of LPD should be commended for their handling that situation, with little to no positive reinforcement from the Mayor or the Council.

Get behind our Officers, or your doors may be the next the mob comes crashing in.

Richard Newcomer
Sent from my iPad

Angela M. Birkett

From: Raymond Miller <mrgusmiller@icloud.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 4:36 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support for LPD

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Greetings,

We want to make sure that you know beyond any doubt that we support the Lincoln Police Department and all law enforcement personnel in our city. The amount of criticism that LPD and others have had to endure is something I have never thought possible. They have proved great restraint and respect for those that are most impacted from the current climate. We more than understand that there is a lot of anger, pain and confusion in our community in which we share. That said, we continue to hold up and fully appreciate the LPD and other LEA's. We pray for all our Lincolnite neighbors, especially those directly impacted. Let's move forward in grace and love at the same time, holding fast to the rule of law for all.

Respectfully,

Gus Miller
7015 Beaver Creek Lane
Lincoln, NE 68516

Angela M. Birkett

From: Charles Gregorius <nesandman@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 4:19 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Law enforcement in Lincoln

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

To members of the Lincoln City Council:

I am writing in support of law enforcement in our fine city. Recent protest events were not called for in the city of Lincoln as they may have been in other cities. I do not believe that our police are routinely racists and that anything perceived as such during the recent protests was likely provoked by not-so-peaceful demonstrators. I am sure most protestors were not involved in any destructive or lawless activity, but such activity did occur and millions of dollars of damage was done. At any time did the peaceful protestors protest or try to stop the vandals, looters and arsonists? NO!

I believe that there are some cities that need to clean up their law enforcement and a review of police and County Sheriff personnel is reasonable. But to rush forward with a guilty verdict on law enforcement in Lincoln without sufficient evidence is uncalled for and unfair.

Charles Gregorius
nesandman@gmail.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: aaron mccooy <amccooy@hotmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 3:51 PM
To: Council Packet

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

If anything we should spend more money on police training. Defunding will only lead to more crime.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Randy Jurgens <randcjurgens@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 3:29 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: funding the police department

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Council members:

I want you to continue funding our local police department. We cannot let our community and country become an anarchy with no control over all the social disrest. I can't even imagine the chaos if we were to cut back on police officers. Who is going to respond when our homes are being vandalized or robbed, our children and grandchildren are being abducted. control the sexual trafficking and provision of child pornography in our community, or protect our elders from the abuse, and protect us all from those wanting to take other people's lives.

Please think seriously about all the ramnifications and pray for the right decision on this subject.
Thanks Cheryl Jurgens (45 year citizen of LIncoln)

Angela M. Birkett

From: Bonnie Collins <blcollins63@icloud.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 2:58 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Police grant

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I'd like to ask all of you if you have ever needed a police officer in your life? I have, and I can tell you right now we expect so much out of the polic. Our elected officials expect far more than the job was ever designed for. I already want to leave Lincoln because the taxes are twice as high as some nicer cities and the leadership is poor! Good grief turning down a much needed grant for police officers! When it all goes incredibly wrong -I pray the people of Lincoln will hold you all accountable.

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Anna <anna_s_68521@yahoo.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 2:51 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Lincoln police, the defund movement etc

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Given the climate of our country of late, it shouldn't be a surprise that this has been brought up here in Lincoln. Some feel we are immune to the same issues that make national headlines so often because, for a growing area, we have a fairly small town feel.

It has come to my attention that tonight's council meeting will have a large contingent of BLM members calling to have Lincoln police defunded. I'm sending this email to let you know that they aren't the majority of thought in Lincoln. There are great numbers of citizens who support Lincoln's men in blue (black?) and feel they are and have been getting a raw deal due to the national temperature on the issue.

Also please note that the mayor promised in her campaign to find funding for and bring aboard five new officers. It is imperative that she fulfills that campaign promise and does not cave to the current anti-police sentiment.

Anna Santana

Angela M. Birkett

From: Jonathan Musgrave <jonathan@cefnebraska.org>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 2:40 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support for Lincoln Police Department

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Mayor and Council,

I support, appreciate, and know we need the Lincoln Police Department. I had the privilege of serving alongside of these men and women as an LPD Chaplain for several years, Their dedication to protect our city as they daily lay their lives on the line is highly commendable.

Most people are sheltered from the evil and darkness that comes as part of every city, yet these men and women see it every day. They are cursed at, deceived, lied to, and treated with contempt, while the majority of Lincolnites live their sheltered lives, only thinking of the police when they need them, or when they are pulled over for speeding.

Consider the following known facts:

1. No. of Lincoln Police Dept. Arrests (2017-2019): 300,120
2. No. of Suspects Resisting Arrests (2017-2019): 893
3. No. of Assaults on LPD Officers (2017-2019): 140
4. Suspects Shot & Killed by LPD officers (2017-2019): 0
5. No. of Unarmed Persons of Color Shot and Killed by Nebraska Law Enforcement Officers since 2015: 0

Sources: LPD Annual Reports; The Washington Post

Not only do these officers sacrifice for our city, but so do their families.

I would encourage the Mayor and City Council to keep their agreement to accept the Federal Grant that gives \$635,000 over three years to fund 5 police officers to deal directly with gun violence, and free up 5 officers currently serving in the area of gun violence to focus on other areas of need within the LPD.

To defund or limit their service to our community would harm our city as lawlessness would increase.

Please continue to fund and support LPD.

For His Glory,

Jonathan Musgrave

CEF of Nebraska State Director

	<p>Jonathan Musgrave (402) 484-7877 Work (402) 525-5305 Mobile jonathan@cefnebraska.org</p> <p>6400 Cornhusker Hwy Suite 400 Lincoln, NE 68507</p>
-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------

Angela M. Birkett

From: Mark Freeouf <mark.freeouf@doane.edu>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 2:30 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: SUPPORT THE POLICE! ACCEPT THE GRANT!

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

City Council Members,

Please support our local police by accepting the federal grant to add 5 more officers to the force. This is badly needed in Lincoln, as the officer/citizen rate is only 11.6/10,000 people, compared to a national average of 18.7/10,000.

I believe your motivation for even considering the opposite stems from some sort of feeling of "virtue" you garner by jumping on the currently chic "anti-cop bandwagon". However, I warn you, this is an entirely false feeling of virtue that stems more from your sense of political convenience.

In a year you will wish you had accepted 5 more officers. Consider how accepting 5 "free" police would have been a "no-brainer" for the council and mayor a year ago!

Our police do a great job. There have been **ZERO** unarmed person of color shot by police since 2015. There has been **ZERO** suspects shot and killed since 2017!
Punishing the Lincoln Police for a job well done makes **ZERO** sense.

I urge you to stand up for Lincoln and support your oath of office to uphold the laws of Lincoln, by enabling the Lincoln Police Department to effectively do their job. It's common sense, and it's also the right thing to do.

Mark Freeouf

Angela M. Birkett

From: Lynwalt <lynwalt52@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 2:25 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Defending the Police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am concerned that there may be a call to defund the police. I want to come out in favor of DEFENDING the police.

We have had a business in the downtown area for 8 years now and there have been many times when we've had to call the police department for assistance - especially at night, since we are open until 11:00. We already pay for private security, but they are unarmed and call the police if they encounter a problem that they can't resolve.

Our friends in blue have always been kind and courteous. I don't know what we'd do without them.

If we have no police department, I will need to hire additional security and close earlier. This will be a huge blow to my business. After experiencing months of COVID19, we are near a breaking point. This just may push us over the edge.

We serve a low income population. If we go out of business, it will hurt the very people that need us the most.

Please don't let this happen. We need the police. They should be celebrated and given a raise.

Thanks for listening.

Lynette Waltemath, owner Soap Laundry

Angela M. Birkett

From: Anne Hubbell <amhubbell@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 2:11 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Support Lincoln Police Department

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear City Council Members,

I am writing to support the Lincoln Police Department. It saddens me and scares me that there are proposals to defund the police. Our police officers need to be respected and commended for the fine job they do. Compared to other cities, LPD has 11.6 officers/10,000 people and the national average is 18.7/10,000. I also believe the following facts support the need for our police.

- No. of Lincoln Police Dept. Arrests (2017-2019): 300,120
 - No. of Suspects Resisting Arrests (2017-2019): 893
 - No. of Assaults on LPD Officers (2017-2019): 140
 - Suspects Shot & Killed by LPD officers (2017-2019): 0
 - No. of Unarmed Persons of Color Shot and Killed by Nebraska Law Enforcement Officers since 2015: 0
- Sources: LPD Annual Reports; The Washington Post

No suspects were shot and killed by LPD offices between 2017-2019 and no unarmed persons of color were shot and killed by Nebraska law enforcement officers since 2015.

As a citizen of Lincoln, I want to be sure that our city is safe. In just the last week, I have seen an increased number of stabbings, robberies, and other acts of violence in the news. If we reduce the funds for our police, and the number of police officers, we will risk the safety of our city for all citizens.

As a city (and as citizens), I believe we do need to address any racial injustices but defunding the police is not the way to do this! One idea might be to survey ALL of the citizens of Lincoln and gather ideas to promote safety and equality before the law for all.

Please recognize the value of our police and the job they do to promote safety in our city!

Sincerely,
Anne Hubbell

Angela M. Birkett

From: Hugh Lau <hlau5150@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, June 29, 2020 2:00 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Do not defund our police

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear City Council,

I am a business owner in Lincoln Nebraska. This email is to let you know that I will move out of the this city on the very day that you vote to defund our valuable and necessary police department. I will relocate to a city that understands the rule of law.

Hugh Lau

Sent from my iPhone

Angela M. Birkett

From: Sarah O'Neill <sarhoneill92@gmail.com>
Sent: Thursday, July 02, 2020 11:31 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Oppose Cervantes Recommendation

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello,

My name is Sarah O'Neill, and I am a resident of Lincoln. I am reaching out today to demand that the City Council oppose the recommendation of Pablo Cervantes to the Planning Commission.

Always, and now more than ever given our pandemic, landlords have played an extremely harmful and even lethal role in contributing to housing insecurity in our city and communities all over. It would be irresponsible and utterly disrespectful to the people you serve, who are certainly not predominantly landlords, to allow someone who plays such an integral role in systemic inequality to represent them. Given our country's ugly history with racist housing, property, redlining, and zoning laws, this is absolutely reprehensible.

Cervantes has filed a dozen eviction actions since the pandemic started. Someone who would risk the lives of people by taking away their access to a basic human need, shelter, during a public health crisis is dangerous. His complete disrespect for the low income members of our community, who have not only been the ones most economically harmed by the pandemic, but also most likely to be at risk for contracting COVID-19, is unconscionable to say the least.

Furthermore, I cannot understand why we would want someone who will directly benefit, as a landlord of nearly 120 apartments in Lincoln, from the decisions he makes in this position. This is a clear conflict of interest. You cannot support this.

As a volunteer for the pro bono Tenant Assistance Project, I have seen first-hand the way landlords prey on our community's most vulnerable residents and the systemic oppression, racism, and classism that people like Cervantes uphold for their own selfish benefit.

It is morally imperative that you oppose this recommendation and demand the Mayor think critically and deeply about the racism and classism that her choices perpetuate.

Sincerely,

Sarah O'Neill

--

Sarah O'Neill

she | her | hers

J.D. Candidate 2021

University of Nebraska College of Law

Angela M. Birkett

From: Kathryn Brunke <katieryann@gmail.com>
Sent: Friday, July 03, 2020 12:10 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Planning commission

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello,

I am writing today as a concerned member of the Lincoln community. I am asking you to oppose the appointing Pablo Cervantes to the Lincoln/Lancaster County planning commission. I first met Pablo and his wife Katie in 2011 while our children attended the same preschool. Overtly they are extremely nice people who are very easy to have a conversation with. They can be found supporting many nonprofits in our community. Yet during this continuing covid19 pandemic they quietly have been evicting tenants from their CASA properties. If the rest of us aren't entitled to our regular income during a global pandemic why are landlords Pablo and Katie Cervantes? This is a disgusting abuse of power. The deliberate choice to evict people, families when the safest place for everyone is to stay home shows Pablo's lack of community care. As you know the planning commission controls safe and affordable housing so having Pablo Cervantes, landlord, making planning decisions isn't in the best interest of our community. It's only for Pablo and Katie Cervantes, owners of CASA properties, best interests to profits off the people to approve Pablo's nomination. Please oppose Mayor Lerion's nomination.

Thank you,
Katie Brunke
Indian Village neighborhood

Angela M. Birkett

From: Madeleine McManus <maddiekatemcmanus@gmail.com>
Sent: Saturday, July 04, 2020 2:12 PM
To: Mayor; Sean H. Flowerday; Christa G. Yoakum; Deb E. Schorr; Rick W. Vest; Commish; James M. Bowers; Richard W. Meginnis; Jane Raybould; Tammy J. Ward; Sandra J. Washington; Roy A. Christensen; Council Packet
Subject: Housing Justice: Oppose recommendation of Pablo Cervantes to Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commisison

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello Mayor Baird, Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission Members, and City Council Members,

My name is Madeleine McManus and I am writing today as a concerned citizen with regard to the recommendation of landlord Pablo Cervantes to the Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission.

The reason for my concern with Cervantes' recommendation to Commission appointment stems from his interests as a landlord in a position of power within the Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission. Cervantes, as the owner of CASA Properties and CASA Property Management, owns almost 120 apartments in Lincoln. He has filed a dozen eviction actions since the beginning of the COVID-19 pandemic. These eviction actions will displace people from their right to safety within homes during a public health crisis. In the difficult rental housing market during the pandemic, these evicted persons may not be able to easily find new housing where they will be safe. Housing is always a human right and housing justice is not optional.

In addition to dangerous evictions, a simple Google search will lead to a wealth of negative reviews of CASA Properties management, citing unprofessional behavior including not responding to phone calls and emails, illegal behavior including no notice given before entering properties, and unhealthy conditions including bug infestations. I have little faith that an irresponsible property manager would be responsible to take on the larger role of a seat on the Planning Commission. I say this because the Planning Commission has strong influence over the availability of safe, affordable housing. This influence comes from the advising power on issues such as zoning, code inspections, and Section 8 vouchers. With the negative reviews of unsafe treatment renting from CASA, and Cervantes' profit motive as a landlord, I question whether he would responsibly use his seat to zone for affordable housing, to advise coding inspections especially in cases of housing complaints, and to advise Section 8 vouchers for affordable housing. How would Cervantes' position prevent him from setting himself up to profit from our current housing shortage?

Again, I implore you to rethink the recommendation of landlord Pablo Cervantes to the Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission in the interests of public health and availability of safe, affordable housing for Lincoln residents.

Best,

Madeleine McManus
945 D St, Apt 10
402 770 6547

maddiekatemcmanus@gmail.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Elizabeth Woody <enwoody3@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 4:58 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Oppose the appointment of Pablo Cervantes to Lancaster County Planning Commission

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Lincoln City Council members,

My name is Elizabeth Woody, I am a constituent of Lincoln, Nebraska, zip code 68503. I am emailing to demand that you oppose Mayor Gaylor Baird's recommendation of Pablo Cervantes to the Planning Commission.

As a property owner of over 100 apartments in Lincoln, Mr. Cervantes' occupation of the vacant seat on the Planning Commission would present a concerning profit incentive. It is irresponsible to grant the power provided by this commission to a person who could benefit financially from its decisions. Regardless of how respected this person is in our community, the potential profit incentives of a property owner having power to affect city housing planning should make you wary.

I urge you to tell Mayor Gaylor Baird to withdraw this recommendation and appoint a more appropriate candidate.

Best,

Elizabeth Woody

Angela M. Birkett

From: robert stewart <robertstewart525@hotmail.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 9:05 AM
To: James M. Bowers
Subject: please keep public comments & please keep Pablo Cervantes off the planning commission

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello,

My name is robert stewart, & I am a resident of Lincoln.

I would like to start by thanking all of you (at least those of you with the dedication & courage to show up) for the time & energy you put in at the council meeting on June 29. It was an amazing process to witness & be a part of. I would encourage the council to retain public comments (including online, live access to the proceedings) in perpetuity moving forward. The people of the community should have every opportunity to contribute their voices & ideas to the decisions being made which affect them.

On another topic related to representation, & related to future business, I demand that the council vote against confirming Pablo Cervantes' nomination to the Planning Commission. We need voices in these positions that represent the people most affected by the decisions being made. Putting a landlord in charge of housing during a time when this same landlord is evicting tenants whose income & stability has been compromised by the ongoing covid disaster, shows a decisive tendency to omit & silence the voices of people who should be protected. To have these vulnerable members of our community then being 'represented' by money-worshipping defenders of the unjust status quo, only exacerbates an already destructive system.

I realize there's a lot going on right now- that is why it is necessary of all of us to work to help those who have been disenfranchised, silenced & left out of the discussion in the system as it currently exists in our city & our county. That means listening to voices of people being put out on the street by profiteering 'land owners', all of whom are trafficking in land stolen from Indigenous people anyway.

Thank you for your time, & again, I strongly urge the council to do some re-thinking about how business is conducted in our city & how to make real changes that help those most in need.

Sincerely,

robert stewart
1029 Sumner St.

Angela M. Birkett

From: Jessie Gray <jessjogray@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 10:24 AM
To: James M. Bowers; Richard W. Meginnis; Jane Raybould; Tammy J. Ward; Sandra J. Washington; Bennie R. Shobe; Roy A. Christensen; Council Packet
Subject: Oppose Pablo Cervantes Appointment

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

City Councilmembers,

My name is Jessie Gray and I am a resident of Lincoln, NE. I am emailing you to strongly urge you NOT to appoint Pablo Cervantes to the City Planning Commission.

It is a blatant conflict of interest to have a landlord on the Planning Commission, especially one who has evicted at least 12 families during this crippling pandemic.

The Planning Commission is a very powerful board and by appointing Cervantes, you are endangering the residents of your city.

Thank you in advance for doing what's right.

Best,
Jessie Gray

Angela M. Birkett

From: Lydia Cotton <lydiadaneen@gmail.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 11:06 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Fwd: OPPOSE Pablo Cervantes Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Hello Lincoln City Council Members,

Thank you for your time and efforts to keep our city running and well organized in this historic time we are living in. I hope you all take a moment to please consider one more item on what is I'm sure a long list of professional considerations. I am reaching out to ask that you OPPOSE the nomination of Pablo Cervantes to the vacant seat on the Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission.

To nominate Pablo Cervantes would be to nominate someone with a conflict of interest. The Commission's role has a direct impact on controlling the supply of safe affordable housing. If someone who owns a portion of the housing in the area they could use their appointment to ensure they continue to profit from a housing shortage. That potential for profit creates strong incentives to make decisions that aren't in the best interest of Lincoln residents.

I OPPOSE his nomination and ask that you withdraw him for consideration.

Thank you for your time and I hope you consider the perspectives and input of your Lincoln residents.

Lydia Cotton

--

Lydia D. Cotton
lydiadaneen@gmail.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: rosalinddk@gmail.com
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 1:05 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Vote Against the Nomination of Pablo Cervantes

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Lincoln City Council,

My name is Rosalind Kichler. I am a citizen of Lincoln, NE. **I am writing to urge you to vote against the nomination of Pablo Cervantes to the Lincoln/Lancaster County Commission.** Mr. Cervantes is the owner of CASA Properties, which owns nearly 120 apartments in Lincoln. Mr. Cervantes should not be considered for the Commission due to the conflict of interest between his business and the role of the Commission to protect safe, affordable housing. As a landlord/property manager with over 100 properties, increasing the price of housing would financially benefit him. How can he be trusted to protect safe, affordable housing when destroying it would be far more profitable?

Worse, Mr. Cervantes filed over a dozen evictions in the middle of the COVID-19 pandemic. Whether legal or not (and I suspect not all were given the Governor's pause on evictions until May 31st), evicting families in the midst of a global health crisis is truly heartless. His actions demonstrate Mr. Cervantes values profits over people; he does not care about the well-being of Lincoln's citizens, only his bottom line. Again, I urge you to vote against confirming Pablo Cervantes.

Sincerely,
Rosalind Kichler

Rosalind Kichler, M.A.
(she/her)
Ph.D. Student || Sociology
University of Nebraska- Lincoln

Angela M. Birkett

From: Jim Frohman <jimfrohman@outlook.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 8:51 AM
To: Mayor; Council Packet
Cc: Jeff R. Kirkpatrick; Nick Cusick; dstading@keatinglaw.com
Subject: Charter Revision Commission

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Multiple administrations and councils have stated that before they will consider charter changes, they must be reviewed by the Charter Revision Commission. This consensus has established the Commission as a vital part of the change process that should only be bypassed in very exceptional circumstances.

Currently the municipal code directs the Mayor to “attempt to achieve a balanced commission membership” ... “both geographically and socio-economically”. Since many of the changes the Commission review would be considered partisan issues it is vitally important that this key Commission is also balanced politically. Without this balance every decision made by the Commission could be questioned based on the membership.

There are four possible openings on the Charter Revision Commission. Three members terms expire on 07/15/2020 and Yohance Christie will become an ex officio member later in the month when he becomes City Attorney. This is an opportunity for the Mayor to politically balance this commission.

Currently there are seven democratic members, three nonpartisan members, three members that appear to be unregistered voters, two republican members, and no libertarian members. This is not a balanced membership.

This is a Commission that could have every decision questioned on political terms. The Council is where political decisions should be made. The Commission should be as reasonably as possible a neutral reviewer of charter changes.

I ask the Mayor to balance this Commission politically when making appointments later this month.

I ask the Mayor and Council to update Municipal Code 4.04.010 to explicitly require political balancing of the Charter Revision Commission by making the change below.

4.04.010 Charter Revision Commission Established; Membership.

... In making appointments to the commission, the Mayor shall attempt to achieve a balanced commission membership which shall be a reasonable representative cross- section of the residents of the city, ~~both~~ politically, geographically, and socio-economically. ...

The Charter is a vital part of the foundation of Lincoln. It is important that the Commission charged with reviewing changes is representative of the citizens of Lincoln. It is important that the Commission be balanced both geographically and socio-economically. In these partisan times it is also very important that the Commission be balanced politically.

Jim Frohman
7335 Pioneers Blvd
Apt. 212
Lincoln, NE 68506
402.617.2484
jimfrohman@outlook.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Nick Cusick <ncusick@bisoninc.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 9:21 AM
To: Jim Frohman
Cc: Mayor; Council Packet; Jeff R. Kirkpatrick; dstading@keatinglaw.com
Subject: Re: Charter Revision Commission

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Would support your suggestion.

Nick

Sent from my iPad

On Jul 6, 2020, at 8:51 AM, Jim Frohman <jimfrohman@outlook.com> wrote:

Multiple administrations and councils have stated that before they will consider charter changes, they must be reviewed by the Charter Revision Commission. This consensus has established the Commission as a vital part of the change process that should only be bypassed in very exceptional circumstances.

Currently the municipal code directs the Mayor to “attempt to achieve a balanced commission membership” ... “both geographically and socio-economically”. Since many of the changes the Commission review would be considered partisan issues it is vitally important that this key Commission is also balanced politically. Without this balance every decision made by the Commission could be questioned based on the membership.

There are four possible openings on the Charter Revision Commission. Three members terms expire on 07/15/2020 and Yohance Christie will become an ex officio member later in the month when he becomes City Attorney. This is an opportunity for the Mayor to politically balance this commission.

Currently there are seven democratic members, three nonpartisan members, three members that appear to be unregistered voters, two republican members, and no libertarian members. This is not a balanced membership.

This is a Commission that could have every decision questioned on political terms. The Council is where political decisions should be made. The Commission should be as reasonably as possible a neutral reviewer of charter changes.

I ask the Mayor to balance this Commission politically when making appointments later this month.

I ask the Mayor and Council to update Municipal Code 4.04.010 to explicitly require political balancing of the Charter Revision Commission by making the change below.

4.04.010 Charter Revision Commission Established; Membership.

... In making appointments to the commission, the Mayor shall attempt to achieve a balanced commission membership which shall be a reasonable representative cross- section of the residents of the city, ~~both~~ politically, geographically, and socio-economically. ...

The Charter is a vital part of the foundation of Lincoln. It is important that the Commission charged with reviewing changes is representative of the citizens of Lincoln. It is important that the Commission be balanced both geographically and socio-economically. In these partisan times it is also very important that the Commission be balanced politically.

Jim Frohman
7335 Pioneers Blvd
Apt. 212
Lincoln, NE 68506
402.617.2484
jimfrohman@outlook.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Jim Frohman <jimfrohman@outlook.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 9:35 AM
To: dstading@keatinglaw.com; Nick Cusick; Council Packet
Cc: Jeff R. Kirkpatrick
Subject: Next Charter Revision Commission Meeting and Municipal Code Changes
Attachments: 2020 Charter Revision Suggestions - November Elections.pdf

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I realize that having a meeting in the next month or so is problematic. COVID-19 has made a mess of things. The problem is that to get anything on the November ballot it must be on the Council agenda by August 24th for first reading. This is only seven weeks away. Considering how things have worked for the last few years seven weeks is a very short time.

I have updated my suggested charter changes and attached them to this email. I have updated the suggestions based on Mr. Kirkpatrick's description of what happened at the last meeting and on other changes since then. I have also included changes to the municipal code section for the Charter Revision Commission. Even though they are not on the charter these are changes that would affect the Commission and I thought you may want to consider them and make a recommendation to the Council.

For Council members I ask you to consider the municipal code changes. The Charter Revision Commission has become an integral step in making changes to the charter. In the past there have been issues that arose due to the tight schedule that the Council has been on with Charter changes. There have also been issues that are largely political in nature that probably should have been left to the Council. The suggested municipal code changes address these issues. Finally, the Commission is currently unbalanced politically. This Commission needs to be a neutral arbiter if their decisions are not going to be dismissed for political reasons. This concern is also addressed in my suggested changes.

Thank you to all of you for your service and time.

Jim Frohman
7335 Pioneers Blvd
Apt. 212
Lincoln, NE 68506
402.617.2484
jimfrohman@outlook.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Don Stading <dstading@keatinglaw.com>
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 10:14 AM
To: Nick Cusick; Jim Frohman
Cc: Mayor; Council Packet; Jeff R. Kirkpatrick
Subject: RE: Charter Revision Commission

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

agree

From: Nick Cusick [mailto:ncusick@bisoninc.com]
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 9:21 AM
To: Jim Frohman <jimfrohman@outlook.com>
Cc: mayor@lincoln.ne.gov; councilpacket@lincoln.ne.gov; JKirkpatrick@lincoln.ne.gov; Don Stading <dstading@keatinglaw.com>
Subject: Re: Charter Revision Commission

Would support your suggestion.

Nick

Sent from my iPad

On Jul 6, 2020, at 8:51 AM, Jim Frohman <jimfrohman@outlook.com> wrote:

Multiple administrations and councils have stated that before they will consider charter changes, they must be reviewed by the Charter Revision Commission. This consensus has established the Commission as a vital part of the change process that should only be bypassed in very exceptional circumstances.

Currently the municipal code directs the Mayor to “attempt to achieve a balanced commission membership” ... “both geographically and socio-economically”. Since many of the changes the Commission review would be considered partisan issues it is vitally important that this key Commission is also balanced politically. Without this balance every decision made by the Commission could be questioned based on the membership.

There are four possible openings on the Charter Revision Commission. Three members terms expire on 07/15/2020 and Yohance Christie will become an ex officio member later in the month when he becomes City Attorney. This is an opportunity for the Mayor to politically balance this commission.

Currently there are seven democratic members, three nonpartisan members, three members that appear to be unregistered voters, two republican members, and no libertarian members. This is not a balanced membership.

This is a Commission that could have every decision questioned on political terms. The Council is where political decisions should be made. The Commission should be as reasonably as possible a neutral reviewer of charter changes.

I ask the Mayor to balance this Commission politically when making appointments later this month.

I ask the Mayor and Council to update Municipal Code 4.04.010 to explicitly require political balancing of the Charter Revision Commission by making the change below.

4.04.010 Charter Revision Commission Established; Membership.

... In making appointments to the commission, the Mayor shall attempt to achieve a balanced commission membership which shall be a reasonable representative cross- section of the residents of the city, ~~both politically,~~ geographically, and socio-economically. ...

The Charter is a vital part of the foundation of Lincoln. It is important that the Commission charged with reviewing changes is representative of the citizens of Lincoln. It is important that the Commission be balanced both geographically and socio-economically. In these partisan times it is also very important that the Commission be balanced politically.

Jim Frohman
7335 Pioneers Blvd
Apt. 212
Lincoln, NE 68506
402.617.2484
jimfrohman@outlook.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Don Stading <dstading@keatinglaw.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 12:01 PM
To: Jim Frohman; Nick Cusick; Council Packet
Cc: Jeff R. Kirkpatrick
Subject: RE: Next Charter Revision Commission Meeting and Municipal Code Changes

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Thanks

From: Jim Frohman [mailto:jimfrohman@outlook.com]
Sent: Monday, July 06, 2020 9:35 AM
To: Don Stading <dstading@keatinglaw.com>; Nick Cusick <ncusick@bisoninc.com>; councilpacket@lincoln.ne.gov
Cc: JKirkpatrick@lincoln.ne.gov
Subject: Next Charter Revision Commission Meeting and Municipal Code Changes

I realize that having a meeting in the next month or so is problematic. COVID-19 has made a mess of things. The problem is that to get anything on the November ballot it must be on the Council agenda by August 24th for first reading. This is only seven weeks away. Considering how things have worked for the last few years seven weeks is a very short time.

I have updated my suggested charter changes and attached them to this email. I have updated the suggestions based on Mr. Kirkpatrick's description of what happened at the last meeting and on other changes since then. I have also included changes to the municipal code section for the Charter Revision Commission. Even though they are not on the charter these are changes that would affect the Commission and I thought you may want to consider them and make a recommendation to the Council.

For Council members I ask you to consider the municipal code changes. The Charter Revision Commission has become an integral step in making changes to the charter. In the past there have been issues that arose due to the tight schedule that the Council has been on with Charter changes. There have also been issues that are largely political in nature that probably should have been left to the Council. The suggested municipal code changes address these issues. Finally, the Commission is currently unbalanced politically. This Commission needs to be a neutral arbiter if their decisions are not going to be dismissed for political reasons. This concern is also addressed in my suggested changes.

Thank you to all of you for your service and time.

Jim Frohman
7335 Pioneers Blvd
Apt. 212
Lincoln, NE 68506
402.617.2484
jimfrohman@outlook.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: Grant Daily <grant.daily@nwlincoln.org>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 10:28 AM
To: Planning; Council Packet
Subject: SP20020 at 838 F

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Planning Commission and City Council,

I am recommending that SP20020 at 838 F be rejected as proposed, and be re-worked to better consider the existing context and quality of life of neighborhood residents.

Transitional housing and alternatives to imprisonment are much needed, and I am glad that proposals of this sort have started to come forward. As a society, we throw far too many people in jail, and far too often use punitive measures where expanded treatment and effective social safety nets could help solve underlying problems. However, I believe that the proposal, as introduced, fails to consider the impact of the facility on the existing neighborhood.

After roughly 3 years of serving as the president of the South Salt Creek neighborhood, which encompasses the proposed facility, I have gotten to deeply know and love the area. Many families along 8th Street take part in the South Salt Creek Community Organization, and there are a lot of kids that live along 8th Street. The location of the proposed facility is next to Cooper Park - a park that the neighborhood loves, but also a park that has had a history of problems occurring at night (drinking, vandalism, etc).

With 8 hours without supervision in this facility, the potential for things to happen during the unsupervised hours seems high, especially if those hours are at night. With families along the street, a middle school, and a community park all right next door to the house, this facility poses a large potential impact to the quality of life of nearby families, and the neighborhood as a whole.

I would also encourage the commission and council to seriously reflect on the equity of this proposal to a lower-income neighborhood like South Salt Creek: would a use like this be approved just across the street from a school and park in a more affluent residential neighborhood? Wouldn't these facilities be better located in underutilized commercial retail space than in a neighborhood?

However, I don't want to simply speak against this proposal without providing ideas on how to make the request better. I want to advance a few ideas that could make this facility work for both the housed individuals and the neighborhood.

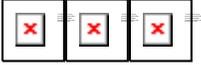
A few ideas that could potentially make this request work:

1. 24/7 supervision of individuals
2. Outreach from the applicant to existing neighbors - South Salt Creek has had no communication about this proposal until this notice

3. A plan for addressing issues as they arise - if this facility is continually a problem, what steps will the city or the applicant take to rectify this issue?

--

Grant Daily, MCRP
Community Specialist
NeighborWorks Lincoln
2530 Q Street
Lincoln, NE 68503
(402) 477-7181 EXT 102
grant.daily@nwlincoln.org
nwlincoln.org



NeighborWorks Lincoln revitalizes neighborhoods and supports homeownership, keeping Lincoln a safe and prosperous community



Angela M. Birkett

From: Pat Anderson <panderson@nwlincoln.org>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 5:37 PM
To: Planning; Council Packet
Subject: SP20020, Sp20005
Attachments: Planning.Comm.3.17.2020.re. halfway house.docx

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Planning Commissioners and City Council,

I sent the following letter when SP20005 was under review. Unfortunately, Planning Commissioners passed that permit. A week later we have another permit under review and I hear rumblings of several more. As I said in my March 17th letter, I'm not against housing inmates, I'd rather do that than build another prison. BUT I do want accountability. If the Planning Commission and City Council can't require more accountability, who can?

To: Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission

RE: Special Permit 20005

Property Address 420 S. 28th St.

March 17, 2020

From: Pat Anderson-Sifuentez

1500 South 11th Street, Lincoln, NE, 68502

402-617-1580

panderson201@gmail.com

I am writing not in support or against this special permit, but to share my grave concerns and experience.

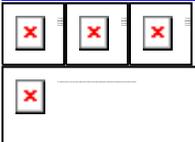
I live in Everett neighborhood- 9th to 13th, J to South St. Everett seems to be one of those neighborhoods where there is a diversity of land uses and everything "fits within the character of the block and neighborhood." As a result, Everett has been home to a few facilities such as is proposed at 420 South 28th.

There were several operations in Everett housing men recently released from the penitentiary in the early 2000's-2010. A church ran one house on Plum Street. Six men were housed there coming out of prison. The only criteria the church asked was to address their substance abuse Men were expected to find a job and move into their own apartment within 6 weeks. The church originally thought they would rotate men every 6 weeks! The church's idea of "supervision" was a pastor checked in with the men at 6 pm every night. It wasn't long before neighbors up and down the alley were finding 12 and 24 packs of empty beer containers in their garbage cans. Neighbors reported seeing women entering the home around midnight and leaving early morning. Immediate neighbors with children complained that the men cussed at their young children for riding their bikes on the public walk in front of the house. Everett Neighborhood Association had so many reports that they arranged a meeting with the church staff involved with the facility. The Association made several suggestions to the church such as screening, classes on social skills, accountability on job search, attending AA meetings, and around the clock SUPERVISION. The house finally closed after 6 ATF officers with automatic rifles surrounded the house looking for an escaped convict who was being harbored in the house. The house was sold. During the subsequent rehab, needles were found in the basement.

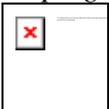
Nebraska needs to address the problem of overcrowding in our penal systems. Alternative solutions are much needed. But an operation such as this should be licensed, have clear expectations for those that are housed there and clear accountability for both parolees and the entity operating the facility.

I urge extreme caution. This will be the first with more to follow as more people are released. If this operation goes unchecked, it will cause hardship directly on the neighborhood. The State, the developer, staff, and probation officers, will go on with their lives. Not so true for those living adjacent.

Pat Anderson-Sifuentez
Community Engagement
NeighborWorks Lincoln
2530 Q St.
Lincoln, NE 68503
(402) 477-7181 EXT 103
www.nwlincoln.org



NeighborWorks Lincoln revitalizes neighborhoods and supports homeownership, keeping Lincoln a safe and prosperous community.



To: Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission
RE: Special Permit 20005
Property Address 420 S. 28th St.
March 17, 2020

From: Pat Anderson-Sifuentez
1500 South 11th Street, Lincoln, NE, 68502
402-617-1580
panderson201@gmail.com

I am writing not in support or against this special permit, but to share my grave concerns and experience.

I live in Everett neighborhood- 9th to 13th, J to South St. Everett seems to be one of those neighborhoods where there is a diversity of land uses and everything "fits within the character of the block and neighborhood." As a result, Everett has been home to a few facilities such as is proposed at 420 South 28th.

There were several operations in Everett housing men recently released from the penitentiary in the early 2000's-2010. A church ran one house on Plum Street. Six men were housed there coming out of prison. The only criteria the church asked was to address their substance abuse. Men were expected to find a job and move into their own apartment within 6 weeks. The church originally thought they would rotate men every 6 weeks! The church's idea of "supervision" was a pastor checked in with the men at 6 pm every night. It wasn't long before neighbors up and down the alley were finding 12 and 24 packs of empty beer containers in their garbage cans. Neighbors reported seeing women entering the home around midnight and leaving early morning. Immediate neighbors with children complained that the men cussed at their young children for riding their bikes on the public walk in front of the house. Everett Neighborhood Association had so many reports that they arranged a meeting with the church staff involved with the facility. The Association made several suggestions to the church such as screening, classes on social skills, accountability on job search, attending AA meetings, and around the clock SUPERVISION. The house finally closed after 6 ATF officers with automatic rifles surrounded the house looking for an escaped convict who was being harbored in the house. The house was sold. During the subsequent rehab, needles were found in the basement.

Nebraska needs to address the problem of overcrowding in our penal systems. Alternative solutions are much needed. But an operation such as this should be licensed, have clear expectations for those that are housed there and clear accountability for both parolees and the entity operating the facility.

I urge extreme caution. This will be the first with more to follow as more people are released. If this operation goes unchecked, it will cause hardship directly on the neighborhood. The State, the developer, staff, and probation officers, will go on with their lives. Not so true for those living adjacent.

Angela M. Birkett

From: J Clark <justinayclark@gmail.com>
Sent: Tuesday, July 07, 2020 10:29 PM
To: Planning; Council Packet
Subject: SP20020

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Planning Commission and City Council,

I am writing to express my strong concern regarding SP20020 at 838 F Street and request that it be rejected as is and that additional responsibilities and accountability measures be put in place before approval. I am a resident of the South Salt Creek and am raising my family in this diverse and lovely neighborhood. I want the city to recognize the impact of this housing on the quality of life of our neighborhood and residents. The proposed location is very near Park Middle School and Cooper Park and I question why the city would even consider approving this type of use so close to spaces that serve children and families.

Some things that could make this more palatable:

- 1) 24/7 supervision. Right now the proposal only calls for 16 hours of supervision Monday-Friday with "one or two" individuals who we can contact in an emergency 24/7. This is not sufficient.
- 2) A clear plan for accountability should issues arise at the transitional housing. How long will it be allowed to operate should there be complaints or issues?

Please consider how you would feel if transitional housing were placed essentially across the street from the school your children attend or the park they play in. Would this request even be considered in an affluent neighborhood?

Most sincerely,

Justina Clark

1008 S. 8th Street

President, South Salt Creek Community Organization

Angela M. Birkett

From: Pamela Grieser <grieser5359@gmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 1:57 AM
To: Council Packet
Subject: SP20020 at 838 F Street

Follow Up Flag: Follow up
Flag Status: Completed

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am writing to express my concerns about SP20020 at 838 F Street. I feel that this should be rejected as is and that additional responsibilities and accountability measures be put in place before this is approved. These are people right out of the Pen... What did they do to get in the Pen? And you want to put them near a school and a Park where there are lots of children?

Some things that would make this better:

24/7 Supervision. The way it is right now, they have too much free time to get into trouble, and no one around to know.

Please think about how you would feel if this were put across the street from the school that your children go to, or the park where your children play. Would this even be considered in a better neighborhood?

Thank you, Pamela Grieser

To: Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission
RE: Special Permit 20005
Property Address 420 S. 28th St.
July 8, 2020

From: Pastor Jeff Heerspink
F Street Neighborhood Church
1302 F Street

Residence 1045 S 13th Street
402-805-2667
fstreetchurch@gmail.com

I am writing in support of this special permit but do share some concerns.

I live in the Everett neighborhood- 13th and D and I work in the Near South 13th and F. I previously served at the Northern Lighthouse Church (6131 North 14th) that focuses its ministry on inmates who are living at CCCL (work release). The primary reason that we wanted to start F Street Neighborhood Church was because of the realization that most of those being released from prison (including those who did not previously live in Lincoln) moved into this general area due to lower cost rentals and in many cases uncaring landlords (Not necessarily someone who wanted to help someone, but someone who just does not care).

It is for this reason that I am in support of this special permit and those like it, with proper accountability and care provided for those who are being released. For those getting out of prison there are a lot of stresses and challenges that many of us have never had to face or think about, often lacking family support or any healthy support structures period. Having people who are there to support these individuals and give proper guidance in place of just seeking to control is what is needed. It is far greater than the alternative that many are forgetting about in standing against this special permit, most of the recently released inmates will move into the neighborhood regardless. Only in many cases they are ending up in large apartment buildings that might have many others who encourage them in their past unhealthy behaviors rather than good behaviors.

Accountability can not be the only word used in this discussion, but care and support have to be there. We must care less about the property values, streets, lighting, etc. and care more for our actual neighbors. I believe that if these homes are started with right intent and structure it is a win for everyone involved.

Thanks for your consideration and know that if I or our church can assist in anyway, we are happy to engage.

Pastor Jeff Heerspink
1302 F Street
Lincoln NE 68508

Angela M. Birkett

From: William Bivin <wdbivin@gmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 9:45 AM
To: Planning; Council Packet
Cc: justinayclark@gmail.com
Subject: SP20020
Attachments: BIVIN-SP20020.docx

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

July 8, 2020

Planning Commission and City Council,

I am recommending that SP20020 at 838 F be rejected. I have a student at Park Middle school who walks to and from school every day, and many other kids do as well who walk down F street. Its proximity to the school alone should disqualify it. I support the need for this type of facility, but put it somewhere other than near a school.

William Bivin, Park Middle School Parent
832 D St
Lincoln, NE 68502
wdbivin@gmail.com
402-570-0491

--

William Bivin

Planning Commission and City Council,

I am writing to express my strong concern regarding SP20020 at 838 F Street and request that it be rejected and a new location be considered. As a home owner in this neighborhood I have enjoyed seeing the improvements made to make it more accommodating to the Haymarket area. If this proposal is passed it seems like the neighborhood will be taking a step backwards. To even consider putting released prisoners next to a school and a city park is unimaginable. As you have read in other proposals, how would you feel if this was being located in your neighborhood? To not have 24/7 supervision shouldn't even had been considered.

As city leaders, I hope you reevaluate your location proposal and find a space more suitable.

Bradley Graham

Planning Commission and City Council,

I am writing to express my strong concern regarding SP20020 at 838 F Street and request that it be rejected as is and only revisited if and when additional responsibilities and accountability measures be put in place. When my husband and I were looking at homes to purchase seven years ago, we fell in love with the South Salt Creek neighborhood and diversity found within. Although we love our neighbors, living across the street from Cooper Park, and the amenities in our neighborhood, safety has always been a concern as we're raising our family with young children. I urge the city to recognize the impact of this transitional housing on the quality of life of our neighborhood and residents. With this proposed location so near Park Middle School and Cooper Park I question why the city would even consider approving this type of housing and question if this would even be proposed in a more affluent neighborhood.

Some things that should be required for this type of proposal:

1. 24/7 supervision. Right now the proposal only requires supervision 47.6% of the time during a given week. Less than half of the hours in a week is not sufficient.
2. A clear plan for accountability should issues arise. What steps will be taken if problems arise? How long will it be allowed to operate should there be issues?
3. Open communication with the neighborhood from the applicant prior to a final notice. When walking home from the downtown library with my children yesterday I noticed a rezoning sign in the front yard of this proposed home and questioned what was going on. An email this morning from my community organization the day of the proposal's approval/denial is not how someone should find out.

Please consider how you would feel if transitional housing were placed across the street from where you live, the school your children attend, or the park where your children play. Also consider the floodgates you are releasing with such limited accountability if this proposal is approved as is. I know the need for transitional housing will only increase so please set the precedent on what is required in order to keep neighborhoods safe.

Sincerely,

Jeanette Broxterman
1000 S. 8th Street

Angela M. Birkett

From: Planning
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 10:22 AM
To: Pat Anderson; Council Packet
Subject: RE: SP20020, Sp20005

Pat

Thank you for submitting your comments regarding the above-referenced application(s), which will become part of the public record. A copy will be shared with each Planning Commission member for their consideration prior to the public hearing on this matter. In addition, a copy of your comments will be provided to staff and the applicant for their information. If you have specific questions, please contact the project planner, George Wesselhoft at 402 441-6366 or gwesselhoft@lincoln.ne.gov.

Also, for your convenience, we have implemented a new online Public Comment Form for your future use. The link to this form can be found at www.lincoln.ne.gov (keyword=pcagenda).

If you have any questions, please feel free to contact me.

Geri Rorabaugh

Administrative Officer
Lincoln-Lancaster County Planning Dept.
402 441-6365

From: Pat Anderson <panderson@nwlincoln.org>
Sent: Tuesday, July 7, 2020 5:37 PM
To: Planning <Plan@lincoln.ne.gov>; Council Packet <CouncilPacket@lincoln.ne.gov>
Subject: SP20020, Sp20005

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Dear Planning Commissioners and City Council,
I sent the following letter when SP20005 was under review. Unfortunately, Planning Commissioners passed that permit. A week later we have another permit under review and I hear rumblings of several more. As I said in my March 17th letter, I'm not against housing inmates, I'd rather do that than build another prison. BUT I do want accountability. If the Planning Commission and City Council can't require more accountability, who can?

To: Lincoln/Lancaster County Planning Commission
RE: Special Permit 20005
Property Address 420 S. 28th St.
March 17, 2020

From: Pat Anderson-Sifuentez
1500 South 11th Street, Lincoln, NE, 68502

402-617-1580
panderson201@gmail.com

I am writing not in support or against this special permit, but to share my grave concerns and experience.

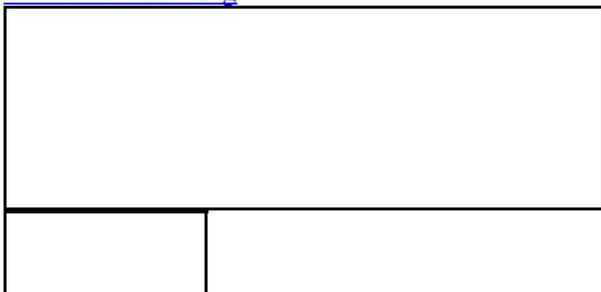
I live in Everett neighborhood- 9th to 13th, J to South St. Everett seems to be one of those neighborhoods where there is a diversity of land uses and everything "fits within the character of the block and neighborhood." As a result, Everett has been home to a few facilities such as is proposed at 420 South 28th.

There were several operations in Everett housing men recently released from the penitentiary in the early 2000's-2010. A church ran one house on Plum Street. Six men were housed there coming out of prison. The only criteria the church asked was to address their substance abuse Men were expected to find a job and move into their own apartment within 6 weeks. The church originally thought they would rotate men every 6 weeks! The church's idea of "supervision" was a pastor checked in with the men at 6 pm every night. It wasn't long before neighbors up and down the alley were finding 12 and 24 packs of empty beer containers in their garbage cans. Neighbors reported seeing women entering the home around midnight and leaving early morning. Immediate neighbors with children complained that the men cussed at their young children for riding their bikes on the public walk in front of the house. Everett Neighborhood Association had so many reports that they arranged a meeting with the church staff involved with the facility. The Association made several suggestions to the church such as screening, classes on social skills, accountability on job search, attending AA meetings, and around the clock SUPERVISION. The house finally closed after 6 ATF officers with automatic rifles surrounded the house looking for an escaped convict who was being harbored in the house. The house was sold. During the subsequent rehab, needles were found in the basement.

Nebraska needs to address the problem of overcrowding in our penal systems. Alternative solutions are much needed. But an operation such as this should be licensed, have clear expectations for those that are housed there and clear accountability for both parolees and the entity operating the facility.

I urge extreme caution. This will be the first with more to follow as more people are released. If this operation goes unchecked, it will cause hardship directly on the neighborhood. The State, the developer, staff, and probation officers, will go on with their lives. Not so true for those living adjacent.

Pat Anderson-Sifuentez
Community Engagement
NeighborWorks Lincoln
2530 Q St.
Lincoln, NE 68503
(402) 477-7181 EXT 103
www.nwlincoln.org



NeighborWorks Lincoln revitalizes neighborhoods and supports homeownership,

Angela M. Birkett

From: william wood <ww34243@windstream.net>
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 10:51 AM
To: Council Packet; Planning
Subject: SP20020

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

Members of the Planning Commission and the City Council:

I am writing in opposition to the granting of Special Permit SP20020. I own property in the immediate area: 901, 913, 912, 926, 930, and 938 F Street, along with 840 So. 10th Street. I am not against alternative to prison facilities. They are very much needed. However, placing one so close to a school is a mistake, especially with the lack of 24 hour supervision. Also, the facility doesn't have what I would describe as appropriate yard space for parking and recreation.

No attempt has been made to work with the affected community organizations.

William J. Wood
808 D Street
Lincoln, NE 68502

July 7, 2020

To the Planning Commission, the City Council, and whomever else may be concerned,

As a homeowner and resident in the South Salt Creek neighborhood, more specifically at 8th Street between D and E Streets, I would like to recommend that the current SP20020 be rejected as it is currently presented.

First of all, I would like to acknowledge the need for and efforts towards alternatives to our dismal prison situation, and I fully support alternatives to long-term mass incarceration and efforts towards healthier transitional living. The consideration of this proposal indicates to me that the city is serious about tackling this problem with more humane alternatives to imprisonment, and for that I am thankful.

As the proposed location for SP20020 sits directly across from Park Middle School and Cooper Park, on a route traveled by many children and families throughout the year, I would like to know more about why and how this property came to be considered “appropriate for this location” (Justification for Recommendation) and how exactly it “fits in with the character of the neighborhood” (Key Quotes from the 2040 Comprehensive Plan). Is it because it is in a traditionally lower socio-economic neighborhood that does not have a history of pushing back on these types of endeavors? Is it because of the perceived notion that people in this neighborhood do not value the safety and well-being of their children and families as much as others due to some kind of perceived faulty characteristic of the neighborhood? As I have never heard of any alternative to prison facility being proposed (or successfully approved) to be located next to a school or park in any of Lincoln’s more socio-economically affluent neighborhoods, I have difficulty believing that this decision is devoid of any of those assumptions.

Furthermore, I have to question why this proposal wasn’t discussed with the neighbors of this proposed facility with ample chance for them to give input, ask questions, or learn about the specific “character of [their] neighborhood” that deems it an appropriate location for SP20020.

The 8-hours that this facility will be unsupervised will be at night, which is traditionally a time when our neighborhood is inside with their families and which has also historically proven to be a time when those inclined to partake in illegal or harmful activities can more easily do so, seems careless and indifferent to our neighborhood’s growth and improvement. Now, I do not wish to extend the sentence of those formally incarcerated by applying further stigmas, labels, and assumptions to them, but as they are often coming from a place of intense 24-hour security and restriction of rights, those 8 hours would provide a window of freedom and opportunity that could be taken advantage of.

We have worked hard in our undervalued and underserviced, yet most historic, neighborhood to decrease crime, improve amenities, and increase well-being and positive connections among our neighbors. The Haymarket and desired urban living that it affords is continuously stretching further and further south to our area, and our Cooper Park, the most historic park in the city, is

often a bustling scene of activity with family gatherings, community events, and recreation. Our neighborhood association is reaching out to and connecting with more and more neighbors who are of minority or greatly underrepresented groups in Lincoln to help them establish a community where they can feel safe, be proud of, and help to build. The historic nature of our neighborhood serving as one of Lincoln's founding blocks where Germans from Russia settled is one of which we're also proud and are working to further promote and feature within Lincoln. If the applicant did not consider or seek to know any of this when determining the "character of the neighborhood" as being appropriate for hosting a partially unsupervised alternative to prison facility next to a school and a park, then I again must question the assumptions behind the proposal of SP20020 and hope that the Planning Commission and City Council will do the same.

Thank you for taking the time to listen to a concerned homeowner and community member today and I am free and available to answer any further questions.

Sincerely,

Crystal Bock Thiessen
1016 S. 8th Street
Lincoln, NE 68508

402-730-8367
photgrabock@gmail.com

Planning Commission and City Council

I recommend that SP20020 at 838 F be rejected as proposed. It may be possible to better think this through, thereby avoiding the problems likely to arise.

It's true the city very much needs transitional housing and alternatives to imprisonment. It's also true the proposed location of this facility is in a "transitional" neighborhood itself, one that struggles with more than it's share of problems. My thought is that a facility of this nature should be in a more stable neighborhood with more supervision, or in an under-utilized commercial space, also with more supervision.

The proposed facility is next to a middle school which is a magnet for after-hours meet-ups in the parking lot, not always of a wholesome nature (drinking, drugs, vandalism, etc). This activity spills out into the neighboring park, and we've seen the need to make many police calls over the years when after-hours activity has gotten out of hand. Why place a transitional housing facility **with no after-hours supervision** into the mix? It seems startlingly ill-conceived. Why set it up for failure? What is the plan for action for problems as they arise?

There has been no outreach to the neighborhood community organization, and to few of the neighbors. For a facility like this to succeed, there needs to community support.

If there were 24/7 supervision, it's possible this could work, but not as currently proposed.

Also, I see the proposed removal of green space to be replaced with concrete parking to be a problem as well. We need to re-think giving up public right of way to private automobile storage. More concrete diminishes the quality of life on a street that has already been hit so hard by ash tree removal.

Thank you for your re-consideration,

Janine Copple

920 S. 8th St., Lincoln, NE 68506

402 805 5330

jhcopple1@gmail.com

Angela M. Birkett

From: John Kos <johnkos@rocketmail.com>
Sent: Wednesday, July 08, 2020 2:15 PM
To: Council Packet
Subject: Prison alternative

[CAUTION] This email comes from a sender outside your organization.

I am in no way shape or form support putting prison inmates in my neighborhood I will be voting against everyone be represented in the neighborhood if this is allowed

John kos
830 e street
4024304040

[Sent from Yahoo Mail for iPhone](#)

7/8/20

Planning Commission and City Council,

I am recommending that SP20020 at 838 F Street be rejected as proposed, and be re-worked to better consider the existing context and quality of life of the South Salt Creek neighborhood residents.

We have lived in this neighborhood for nearly 40 years, raised our children and have enjoyed the area greatly. However, during this time there have also been a variety of problems with crime and violence, especially after dark in the open area of Cooper Park and the surrounding blocks. Although transitional housing and alternatives to imprisonment are much needed, I believe that the proposal, as introduced, fails to consider the impact of the facility on our existing neighborhood.

With 8 hours of unsupervised time daily in this facility, the potential for things to happen during the unsupervised hours seems high, especially if those hours are at night. With families along the street, a middle school, and a community park all right next door to the house, this facility poses a large potential impact to the quality of life of nearby families, and the neighborhood as a whole.

Some ideas that could make this request more acceptable:

1. 24/7 supervision of individuals residing there
2. Outreach from the applicant to existing neighbors - South Salt Creek has had no communication about this proposal until this notice (I just heard about this from our neighborhood group this morning)
3. A plan for addressing issues as they arise - if this facility is continually a problem, what steps will the city or the applicant take to rectify this issue?

Sincerely,

Kathy & Phil Johnson
827 E Street
Lincoln, NE 68508